

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1301: The Past is Gone Like the Wind - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1301: The Past is Gone Like the Wind

Chapter 1301: The Past is Gone Like the Wind

Best friend and a companion during childhood.

"I, Lei Chen, am going to be the man who will become the tribe leader! Su Ming, you have to work hard and become the Elder. At that time, whoever bullies us..."

"It doesn't matter whether you become a Berserker or not. Don't worry, I, Lei Chen, will protect you in the future."

"Hey... Su Ming, what do you think of that girl. I think I quite like her..."

"Are we... going to change..?"

The words from his memories echoed in Su Ming's mind. At that moment, there was a sword between them, and it caused him to sigh softly as complicated emotions rose within him.

"He is my father."

Lei Chen's expression was no longer complicated. Instead, he stared at Su Ming with clear as he spoke softly.

Su Ming fell silent. Only after a long time had passed did he speak.

"I won't kill him."

No matter how great of a killing intent he harbored, at that moment, before Lei Chen... he could not do anything.

In truth, when Su Ming saw Lei Chen in Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos, he had already made some assumptions, because he sensed the presence of the one half of the Seed of Life Extermination which he himself had nourished and which later on had been taken away by Su Xuan Yi on Lei Chen. When he stepped into the Emperor of Abyss' True World, all the answers were revealed.

Naturally, it was impossible for Yu Xuan to be Su Xuan Yi's daughter. She was only the partner he had chosen for his son. She was a furnace he had prepared to nourish the other half of the Seed of Life Extermination. She was just like Su Ming.

Then, the only person who could possibly be Su Xuan Yi's real son was the third prince beside Yu Xuan at the wedding—Lei Chen!

Lei Chen looked at Su Ming. When he heard his words, he closed his eyes, and during that instant, Su Ming took a step forward and moved past him to appear in front of Su Xuan Yi. He then sliced across the air with the sword in his right hand.

Purple light surged through the air. The sky was instantly dyed in purple, but the light disappeared the next moment. When it did, Su Xuan Yi's face turned pale, and he took a few staggering steps back.

Purple light spread out from his body. His facial color became even worse. He could clearly sense that as the purple light spread out, his body became weaker. At that moment, Su Ming's will swept past him and turned into a sharp force that stabbed his heart through his eyes.

It was as if Su Xuan Yi had turned into venous pathways. When Su Ming's will stabbed him, the purple light spread out through them.

At that moment, in a remote cultivation planet in the Emperor of Abyss' True World was a cave abode located in a mountain. Sitting in that cave was a person dressed in a long robe. The instant the purple light entered Su Xuan Yi and he looked up, he revealed an old face with purple light shining in his eyes.

It was one of Su Xuan Yi's clones. At that moment, as purple light shone in his eyes, an invisible hand shot out of the purple light and pushed down at the top of the old man's skull. He could not dodge it. With a loud bang, the old man shuddered, then crumbled into ash, his form and soul destroyed...

In uncountable palaces in True Sacred Yun World was a middle-aged man with an awe-inspiring face sitting upright at the top of a hall. During the second instant since the purple light entered Su Xuan Yi, he stared at the people below him coldly and opened his mouth as if he wanted to say something, but suddenly, he jolted, and purple light surged out from his eyes.

While the cultivators below him were surprised by the sight, Su Ming's hand shot out of the purple light, and in a very casual manner, he pushed it against the center of the middle-aged man's brow. A loud bang shot up and reverberated through the air when the middle-aged man jolted and shattered into pieces.

In the depths of the huge vortex in the Emperor of Abyss' True World was the place where the new spirit of Essence was about to be born. In it was either Su Xuan Yi's real

form or another clone, but at the third instant since the purple light entered Su Xuan Yi's body... he shuddered.

He did not open his eyes, as if he knew that if he opened his eyes, purple light would spread out. He stood up, but the moment he was about to leave, purple light spread out from his body to turn into a gentle strike on his body. He could not avoid the strike destined to hit him.

When it landed on his forehead, the sound of something cracking inch by inch echoed in the air. The purple light disappeared then, and everything was reduced to nothingness.

During the fourth instant, the aloof man who had been meditating quietly beside the corpse of Su Xuan Yi's wife in the fifth kiln let out a soft sigh. He opened his eyes and simply allowed the purple light in his eyes to fill up the air around him. Su Ming's hand appeared from the purple light, and when he pushed at the center of the man's brow, his many years of protection ended...

Located away from Black Ink Planet in Divine Essence Star Ocean was a vast ruins. It was an incredibly dangerous place, but an old man who had messy hair spilling all over his shoulders stayed there. His body was thin, and a thick wave of aura of death was spreading from it. He was sitting on a Rune at that moment.

The Rune was incredibly old, as if it was a seal that suppressed everything within it. The old man might have seemed as if he was filled with the aura of death, but there was a hint of life force in him that refused to disappear, but that was not what was strange about the old man. What was truly strange about him was that there was a mummy stuck on his back!

The mummy had been dead for an unknown number of years, but it had fixed itself tightly on the old man's back and was constantly absorbing his life force and even his aura of death like a parasite...

There was pain on the old man's face. It seemed like he had maintained this sort of life for an unknown number of years, but at that moment, his eyes flew open. There was no panic in him when purple light showed up in his eyes. Instead, there was crazed delight, as if he had been waiting for this for far too long.

As the purple light shone, Su Ming's right hand shot out from within and pushed down at the center of the old man's brow. The old man forced down the excitement in his heart. He did not dodge, and just let the hand formed by Su Ming's will to reduce him to ash. His form and soul were destroyed...

When the purple light disappeared, the mummy, now without a host, opened its eyes and let out a sharp, piercing, crazed howl filled that had a brutal tone.

The sixth instant, seventh instant...

Su Xuan Yi's clones were all destroyed when Su Ming's will swept past them. They were all completely wiped out, and only Su Xuan Yi, who was forced back before Su Ming while his face turned paler, remained. Su Ming did not wipe off this body. He had promised Lei Chen that he would let Su Xuan Yi live.

But as to how he would let him live... Su Ming chose to destroy all of Su Xuan Yi's clones. Even if his real body was among them, to Abyss Builders, even if their real body died, they could remain alive using their unique methods as long as one of their clones still lived.

Once he finished doing all of that, Su Ming cast a glance at Su Xuan Yi, whose level of cultivation had plunged down until he was only in heaven cultivation because all of his clones had died. He shook his head, then turned around to walk towards Yu Xuan. When he returned to her side, Su Ming gently tapped the center of her brow with his right hand.

Yu Xuan was still watching Su Ming. She did not move away and simply allowed his finger to land on her. Su Ming's will surged into her body. When it circulated through her once, the Seed of Life Extermination resembling half of a ship was brought out once Su Ming severed its connection with her.

When Su Ming saw numerous squirming tentacle-like threads surrounding the Seed of Life Extermination when he brought it out, disgust appeared on his face. He'd had this thing on his body in the past. When he took it out, he threw it to Lei Chen.

The half of the Seed of Life Extermination charged swiftly to Lei Chen. At the moment it touched him, it fused into his body and merged perfectly with the other half of the Seed of Life Extermination that Su Ming had nourished in the past and which was residing in Lei Chen's body. It... became complete!

"Since your father did everything he could to obtain this and make it fuse with you... then from now on, since the favors and grudges between us cannot be cleared, it is better that we let our past be gone like the wind and our memories of each other disappear..."

Su Ming cast Lei Chen a deep glance, then with Yu Xuan in hand, he moved to Elder Mo Sang. Once he bowed to him with Yu Xuan, a smile appeared on the elder's face.

"Elder... let's go home," Su Ming whispered softly.

His elder's smile became even more kindly. He nodded, and the three of them stepped into the air. When they walked out of the ancient tree, Su Ming's low whisper traveled into the Sovereign of Dawn's ears.

"Wait for me ten years later at Arid Triad's gap."

Lei Chen stared at Su Ming's back with a dispirited expression. He suddenly called out, "Su Ming..."

Su Ming stopped. When he turned his head around to look, Lei Chen's voice, filled with an indecipherable tone, reached his ears.

Lei Chen's body shuddered lightly. He stared at his childhood friend who was his best friend and mumbled, "I'll tell you the answer to the question you asked before. I don't want to change... but you've already changed."

There was a profound look in Su Ming's eyes that made it seem as if he had seen through everything. Perhaps he had not noticed many things before he came there, but when the red figure appeared, he had already obtained his answer.

When he destroyed Su Xuan Yi's clones, instead of saying that he ended the grudge between them, it would be best to say that this was actually a part of Su Xuan Yi's plans.

With Su Ming's power, he destroyed the predicament Su Xuan Yi was in. As for whether Lei Chen told Su Xuan Yi about the fact that Su Ming went to Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos, Su Ming did not want to think about it. It was just as he said, he would rather treat it as it never happened and would rather that they became strangers from then on. If he was not provoked, they would not meet the other again.

"This is the Su Xuan Yi I know."

When Su Ming turned his head, he averted his gaze from Lei Chen. What he saw was a calm Su Xuan Yi with a gaze as profound as Su Ming's own. The two of them met each other's eyes, but it only lasted for an instant.

Su Ming left, and he brought with him Yu Xuan as well as his elder. He walked out of the tree crown. Behind him, the one million cultivators wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed to him. They did so to thank him for saving their lives.

"Wait."

Once he arrived on the sea while Lei Chen remained dispirited with a complicated expression on his face and Su Xuan Yi stared at him with a calm look and a profound gaze, Su Ming stopped once more.

He turned his head around. This time, he did not look at the tree crown, but the elegant young man standing beside the ancient tree. At that moment, he was also looking at Su Ming.

At the instant their gazes met, a smile appeared on Su Ming's face. He looked at the young man, the sea, and the ancient tree, then spoke softly to Yu Xuan and his elder,

“I’m going to meet a senior... Wait for me for a while here.”

As Su Ming spoke, he walked towards the ancient tree. The young man under the tree smiled and watched him approach.

They were above a vast sea, right beside an ancient tree, and the shades of green and blue seemed to connect to the sky.

Chapter 1302: Arid Triad

On the vast sea, beside the ancient tree, the shades of green and blue seemed to be connected to the sky.

The waves glistened, seas of clouds tumbled. Where could one find the end of the world?

The ancient tree was old, and the shadows of people ancient. Who was younger before the passage of time?

Perhaps there was someone else who was even older than time itself.

It would be the young man standing beneath the tree with a warm smile while watching Su Ming approach.

When Su Ming saw the person under the tree and gradually drew closer to him, he felt as if he was moving step by step into the ancient aeon of the past. With each step, he would go through countless aeons and return to the past, to an unknown period of time long ago... The sky seemed to no longer move. Everything in the world had stopped, and it did so... because Su Ming and the person under the tree were destined to meet.

They were like night and day. They could not meet each other, but only catch a glimpse of each other’s shadow during dusk and dawn, yet even that glimpse was indistinct. Night could not see the noon, and daylight could not see midnight.

But perhaps there would come a day when night would meet day, and that moment would be just like when the young man under the tree met with Su Ming.

Soon, there were two people under the tree. Even though the air between the sky and sea did not move, the setting sun was still around. Its last rays shone on the sea, drawing out Su Ming and the young man’s shadows on water. They were long... very long...

While Su Ming watched the young man, the young man, too, watched Su Ming. At the moment their eyes met, Su Ming saw endless age and profundity in the young man's gaze. There was also a hint of fatigue in that profundity that could not be dispelled.

That fatigue seemed to be the type that would only be possessed by someone who had lived for far too long. It was a natural fatigue. The young man did not want to hide it, and so he did not even try. It was there in his gaze, and his entire life was contained in that fatigue. If anyone understood it, they would understand the world, and if they did not understand it... they would not see him.

Those who fell into the latter category would be just like Yu Xuan at that moment. She could not see the young man under the tree. Elder Mo Sang was little different. He might appear as calm as ever, but his heart trembled greatly. He could not see the young man, but he could see two long shadows in the reflection of the tree on the surface of the sea.

The two shadows swayed as the waves glistened in the light. They would occasionally shatter and sometimes appear complete. It was as if the rise and fall of entire galaxies was contained between the shattering and completion of the shadows. They contained the rise and fall of all lives, as well as their paths.

It seemed like life was actually very simple, just a reflection on the surface of the sea. It was just a shadow that would sway along with the waves.

If anyone took a glance at the sea, they would only see normal shadows, but if they observed them closely, they would find that the ripples of the shadows signified a person's entire life.

They also resembled the moment night and day met. It looked like they could not mix, just like how fire and water could not mix, but it also seemed like they could tolerate each other in a strange fashion, showing a destruction and a wholesomeness created when they crashed into each other in an unseen manner.

"Do you understand now?"

After a long while, the young man under the tree spoke gently without the smile leaving his face. There was not a hint of fierceness and forcefulness in his voice. It was gentle, as if he was a friend, a family member, or an elder.

Perhaps there were people who would answer his question that they did not understand, and there would perhaps be people who would tell him that they understood. However, the moment anyone said either of the two answers, they would place themselves in a disadvantage. In fact, if anyone compared the young man's question to a divine ability, then at that moment, the person who answered would come under its effect.

If a person answered that they did not understand, their actions would be manipulated by the young man's will. If the person answered that they understood, then similarly, in a manner that they would not notice, they would become one with the young man under the tree through his will.

One sentence. One divine ability. His killing intent never appeared, and it could not be noticed by anyone. Only the gentle smile could be seen, but in truth, this was the most unfathomable intent of all of Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

"What about you?"

After some time, a smile appeared on Su Ming's face as well, and he spoke faintly. There was no reverence in his voice, and neither was there the tenderness he would have if he was the older one in the situation. He did not show some unnecessary respect that was expected from a younger person either. He spoke in a tone he would have when he spoke with an equal. His voice was faint, but his tone very sincere.

He also answered a question with a question. He did not answer whether he understood or not. However, because of this sort of answer, praise appeared in the eyes of the young man. He admired Su Ming for not running away but going along with his question. However, he did not end up being manipulated by his will. Instead, he answered his question with another question.

It was a simple question. Perhaps others would not be able to detect too much of a profound meaning behind it, but to the young man under the tree, this question was perhaps something only Su Ming could do and say under this situation.

It might seem ordinary, but it was most definitely anything but ordinary! It might seem like plenty of people could do this... but in truth, in this sort of situation, they would be led to giving up the initiative from their hands without their knowledge, which was what the young man under the tree had done intentionally.

The young man's smile remained on his face as he stared at Su Ming. While smiling, he shook his head. His expression was gentle when he said faintly, "You don't understand."

Su Ming stared at the young man under the tree. He did not speak, but instead watched the light of the setting sun in the distance gradually become weaker. It seemed like the entire sun was about to be devoured by the sea. This scene was like a picture that touched the heart of anyone who saw it, and they would definitely watch it closely.

"When the sun sets, everything in the world becomes dark. You don't understand the darkness at night, and you won't understand why living beings would close their eyes in the dark as well.

"Neither will you understand why living beings open their eyes when the sun rises.

“That is why you will not understand the brilliance of the disaster. It is why... you are scared, but the more scared you are, the more you will want to see... your family, your friends, and everything beside you... never open their eyes in the darkness.”

The voice of the young man under the tree was gentle. If it was someone else around, they might not be able to quite understand what he had said, but Su Ming, who knew of the young man's identity, could.

“Everything has already been predestined, just like how I was destined to come here and meet you.”

The young man under the tree cast a deep look at Su Ming. As his voice echoed in the air, he looked at the setting sun in the distance, and he found that most of it had already disappeared within the sea.

Su Ming smiled. He watched the young man before him. His smile was calm and as light as water.

“Perhaps we were destined to meet in this place, then our meeting is also destined to turn into a setting sun... If I chase after the setting sun... do you think it fall or never fall in my eyes?” When Su Ming said those words, the young man's eyes became focused again.

“If it falls, is it because I wasn't fast enough, or is it because this destined setting sun is bound to fall? If it doesn't fall, then when I chase after it for some time... would this sun still be a setting sun... or would it become a rising sun that will appear the next day?

“Let's put it in other words, while I chase after the sun, would the sky be black, or would it be white?” Su Ming asked four consecutive questions in one go, and the moment he said them, he made the young man's eyes focus four times.

Each word in their exchange was exquisite. There was no killing intent contained in their speech, but it was a battle of wills that was like a question of their Daos.

“That is why it's not that I don't understand it, but it's because you... don't understand... The moment I saw this tree, I knew that when you believe you are you, you... are no longer you.

“When you believe you are no longer you, only then will you be you,” Su Ming said slowly while staring at the young man under the tree.

The young man under the tree fell silent. After a long while, he sighed softly.

“Your appearance is indeed beyond my expectations. I've been asleep for too long, so long that I forgot many things... Are you certain... that you want to work with it... to Possess me?”

The young man stared at Su Ming. His voice was as gentle as ever, but the smile on his face faded away.

Su Ming fell silent.

“The path you want to take is different from mine...” Su Ming said softly.

“There is no one same path, but as long as a path exists, then all paths will eventually fuse into one... to become Dao,” the young man said faintly.

“The world is heartless. It sent the disaster on us. Since the destruction of the world is something that is bound to happen, if you are me, you will do the same thing.”

The young man under the tree swung his arm. The sky above the capital planet of the Emperor of Abyss’ True World immediately darkened. Everything froze. A vortex that no one besides Su Ming and the young man could see appeared there.

The vortex rotated without a single sound. Bolts of lightning swam about it, intersecting and collide with each other. Every single time they collided, the sparks produced seemed to contain the laws of the world in them. As they rose and fell, it looked as if a huge flower born during an age where everything flourished had bloomed in the vortex.

Su Ming looked at each of the sparks in the vortex. When his gaze gathered on one of them, he saw the birth and destruction of each aeon. He saw the deaths of all lives, heard the indignant roars from the people of that time, and witnessed their resentment and anger towards the world. Each spark was an aeon!

“What you see is the despair that is almost identical in every aeon before the disaster fell on them. This is the heartless world. Only by completely destroying it would everything no longer need to go through the disaster.”

The young man’s voice showed no signs that he was worked up. It remained as calm and gentle as ever. Even if there was a sharp note in his words, his voice was still gentle and light. It would not make anyone think bad of him. Instead, they would listen to him carefully to figure out the true meaning behind his words.

“I have walked this path alone, but I cannot be alone in my path for too long. Are you... willing to walk down this path with me? Are you willing to walk down this path and Possess the world so that the disasters will no longer fall upon us, so that all manner of lives will no longer be destroyed by the world but can gain control over their own lives? This is the oath I swore under this tree in the past. It is my will that has never changed since I Possessed a part of Harmonious Morus Alba and turned this Expanse Cosmos into Arid Triad!

"I am Arid Triad! I am the master of this Expanse Cosmos. I am the ancestor of all living things with wills. If... you are willing to follow my footsteps, even if the disaster descends, I can make it so that True Morning Dao World will not perish!"

The young man under the tree stared at Su Ming. When he spoke, he lifted his head. An indescribably mighty pressure instantly spread out from his body. It made it seem like he was the master of the entire universe. It was as if with a flip of his palm, he could turn the sky dark. With a fling of his arm, he could make the stars and space itself move back and crumble.

Su Ming's pupils shrank. The young man's final words made him stare at the body Arid Triad sent down for a long, long time.

Chapter 1303: This Butterfly is You...

"I have to think about it." After some time, Su Ming spoke slowly. His expression was incredibly solemn.

"You do indeed need to think about this carefully. Oh well, I will give you a time limit... of one hundred years. If you've thought about it and have chosen your answer, you will naturally be able to sense my presence.

"During these one hundred years, you cannot Possess any other True World, or else... I will seal you! And the price for sealing you will be that the disaster will be brought forward by a couple more hundred years.

"If you don't choose the answer I want... I will seal you as well. I will only wait for you for a hundred years."

The young man smiled faintly and cast a glance at Su Ming with a thought-provoking look. When he turned around, he walked into the air. His figure possessed natural grace.

When he took his first step, half of his flesh vanished, and that half turned into a skeleton. When he took his second step, the other half of his body was reduced to a skeleton, but he still had a certain amount of life force in him. When he took his third step, it was as if the will gathered in that body had finally left. The skeleton was reduced to ash which disappeared along with the wind.

Su Ming watched Arid Triad leave. He focused his attention to the body of the cultivator Arid Triad had very casually chosen on this cultivation planet so that his will could descend on him. Due to it, all the potential of his life was stimulated so that he could

bear the burden. At that moment, when Arid Triad left, the body withered and turned to ash.

As he watched this scene, Su Ming fell silent. Once Arid Triad left, the entire planet returned to normal.

Su Ming's expression was calm, but a barely noticeable sharp glint appeared in his eyes. When he lowered his head, he cast a deep glance at the ancient tree before him. After a long while... he looked at it again. This time, Su Ming watched it for a long time until he closed his eyes, and when he did, a resolute and firm look appeared beneath his shut eyelids.

The entire talk with Arid Triad to the moment Arid Triad had told him to make his choice might have seemed normal, but only those who had reached Su Ming's level would be able to sense the dangers lurking within it.

Every single one of Arid Triad's sentences contained a sharp and fierce intent. If Su Ming was the slightest bit careless, he would not have been offered a choice, but would have started the war between himself and Arid Triad's will ahead of schedule.

Su Ming's answers, his comparison of night and day and his words when he spoke about the direction of the sun setting if he chased after it contained his will. He did not show any signs of it being affected or changing when he spoke with Arid Triad, which was why Arid Triad did not attack him.

After all, Su Ming already had the right to Possess Arid Triad, which was why even Arid Triad would find it hard to destroy him. He needed a chance and Su Ming showing a weakness so that his plan to descend during the disaster five hundred years later to search for Harmonious Morus Alba and Possess it would not be disturbed. If Su Ming affected his plan at that time, Arid Triad would end up losing more than he gained.

That was why he had asked Su Ming to make a choice, but this choice was in truth not a choice. It was a very blatant threat, but if Su Ming treated it as a real threat, then Su Ming was bound to be sealed. Even if he chose to work together with Arid Triad... Arid Triad would definitely fulfill his promise. He would just seal Su Ming.

Because this choice was a seed. It was a seed Arid Triad planted in Su Ming's heart, just like how Su Ming had planted his seed in Arid Triad with his words about day and night.

Nothing exciting seemed to have happened during the encounter, but only Su Ming and Arid Triad knew that both of them had actually started showing signs of wanting to attack just then.

Su Ming opened his eyes. He turned around and walked towards Yu Xuan and Elder Mo Sang, who was watching him with a face filled with worry.

“Who... was he?”

Su Ming's elder hesitated for a moment before a hint of understanding appeared on his face. The answer to his question had in truth appeared in the elder's heart between the moment he hesitated to ask the question and when that look of understanding appeared on his face.

“Arid Triad.”

Su Ming smiled faintly. He did not say much. When he stared at his very clearly older elder, he knew that there were far too many secrets within the elder's mind, and they were related to the elder's past self as well as Great Berserker Tribe...

“Let's... go home,” Su Ming said softly.

With Yu Xuan in tow and while Su Ming stayed beside his elder, the three of them turned into long arcs and left the cultivation planet. They entered the galaxy and disappeared from the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

Disappearing with them was an excited bald crane and an elated Abyss Dragon. One of them... took away all the crystals from the True World, and the other... had fulfilled its ambitions from when it was younger. The Abyss Dragon mentioned not a word of it, but based on how it often seemed to be recounting its experiences, it looked like there was a hint of lust contained in its ambitions, no matter how anyone looked at it...

.....

Time passed, and in the blink of an eye, three years passed. Su Ming had returned to Ninth Summit. During the three years, he did not venture out again. He kept his senior brothers company while Yu Xuan, Cang Lan, and Xu Hui stayed beside him.

The elder had finally returned to the Berserkers. He built a house at the foot of Dark Mountain, and just like a real old man in the mortal world, he watched the sun rise and set. He lived a very peaceful life.

He had plenty of stories. Perhaps they were stories that spanned through the four eras of their aeon, but Su Ming did not ask him about them. Instead, he often came to sit beside his elder and watch the sky with him. Every single time he did so, Su Ming would remember the Dark Mountain. He remembered Xiao Hong, and all the people who were now strangers to him.

He might not have asked his elder about his secrets, but with Su Ming's level of cultivation, he could already tell some of what was going on. He could see the signs of repeated cycles of life on his elder. With those cycles, the Elder of Great Berserker Tribe had preserved his soul. During them, he might have been searching for the scene he saw when he predicted the Berserker Day but which no one else could see.

It was a butterfly that gave Great Berserker Tribe their future...

The elder lifted his head and looked at Su Ming, who had already left into the distance after he had spent the entire day with him. Under the moonlight, he mumbled softly under his breath, "That butterfly isn't Harmonious Morus Alba... That butterfly is you... my La Su."

As he murmured those words, a sparkle of expectation appeared in his eyes. He would never forget the scene he saw when he predicted the Berserker Day... He had gone through countless cycles of life and death all so that he could wait for Su Ming and protect this child. He had him get in touch with the Berserkers and had him acknowledge them...

During the three years, with his outstanding abilities, second senior brother finally extended Ninth Summit's influence to all areas in True Morning Dao World after Su Ming had stunned and intimidated Dark Dawn and Saint Defier, causing Ninth Summit to live up to their name of being the only sect in True Morning Dao World.

Eldest senior brother also had increased his power every single day. As for Hu Zi, his personality prevented him from staying in one place quietly for too long, so he often ventured out to sweep through the entire True World and pass through the other True Worlds as if displaying Ninth Summit's strength.

Due to Su Ming's existence and the Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei's fear towards him, the cultivators from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier were forced to retreat when Ninth Summit passed by. This also caused the battles where the other True Worlds were clearly in a disadvantage to be unable to continue the moment Hu Zi appeared.

And most of the time, when Hu Zi saw fighting, he would immediately shout, "Ninth Summit has beautiful mountains and clear waters. When Dark Dawn and Saint Defier see Ninth Summit, they have to make a detour! My youngest junior brother is the strongest person in all of Arid Triad, and he is in Ninth Summit. Those who want to join the Ninth Summit, immediately shout. I'd like to see which of these brats from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier would dare to attack you."

It was the truth of the situation as well. As long as Hu Zi was in the battlefield and as long as there were people who shouted that they wanted to join Ninth Summit, even if that person was about to be killed by the cultivators from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier, they would immediately be released. No one had the courage to attack people that belonged to Ninth Summit, and they would not even care about the backlash of their divine abilities because they had stopped attacking.

They could only nurse their grievances, because the Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei had already told all the cultivators... that Ninth Summit was not to be provoked. But the Sovereign of Dawn was not the only one who reacted this way... It was an order that would bring death to all who went against it, for it was an order that unanimously came

from all three Sovereigns of Dawn from Dark Dawn and the three Lords from Saint Defier.

In fact, every single time there were new cultivators who descended from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier in True Morning Dao World, they would first go near Ninth Summit and bow to it before leaving.

Su Ming's name had spread through all of Arid Triad during the three years, and because of it, Ninth Summit's influence became stronger. The number of cultivators who joined it increased by multiple fold. Those were cultivators who had once belonged to other True Worlds. For whatever reason, they chose to become Ninth Summit's disciple. Branch sects had appeared in Ninth Summit, and eldest senior brother and Hu Zi were stationed in the two sects to intimidate the world around them.

Time passed, and another three years went by. During them, some huge incidents happened, such as Su Xuan Yi and Lei Chen disappearing from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, the Emperor of Abyss' True World surrendering to Dark Dawn, and the Sublime Paragon of that True World who had avoided being killed by Su Ming in the past choosing to become Ninth Summit's disciple.

After persevering for five years, True Sacred Yin World was occupied by Dark Dawn and Saint Defier during the sixth year when their True World Protection Rune crumbled. The living beings in there suffered miserably, and the number of deaths was devastating...

Su Ming did not care about any of that. He was not a saint. His heart would only be gentle towards the people he cared about. As for the others... to him, who had already become the strongest will in this Expanse Cosmos second only to Arid Triad, they were all just a part of the rise and fall of life.

It did not matter whether it was Dark Dawn or Saint Defier, for Su Ming had understood a long time ago that the true reason behind why they caused the war. It was an offering...

When the third period of three years arrived and ended, a change of tides appeared in the war that Su Ming paid no attention to. He had predicted the change in tide, because an offering... would require sacrifice from both sides, not just one side, or else it would be a massacre and not an offering.

The change in tide came from the Fourth True World. The Antecedental Spirits who were suppressed in there during the fourth era seemed to have had all the seals suppressing them released in an instant. When they ventured outwards, they waged an intense war against Dark Dawn and Saint Defier.

Their war even affected Ninth Summit. The madness and arrogance of the Antecedental Spirits who were released caused the four True Worlds in Arid Triad to look as if they

had descended into an age of chaos. Only at that moment did Su Ming lift his right hand and put down the chess piece he was about to use to play against his elder. He lifted his head and looked in the direction of the Fourth True World.

“We should... give those Antecedental Spirits a lesson. This Expanse Cosmos can descend into chaos, but there must be in order in chaos, not chaos as of such.”

When Su Ming spoke faintly, his elder smiled kindly. He did not speak, but lowered his head to look at the chessboard.

Chapter 1304: Let This Sea and This Tree Merge Into One

The elder watched the chessboard. With a smile on her face, Yu Xuan remained seated next to Su Ming. Her expression was one of incredible attentiveness. She was also staring at the chessboard.

When Su Ming spoke, a sly look appeared in her eyes. She lifted her hand and tugged a lock of hair dancing in the wind behind her ear. During that moment, Cang Lan suddenly coughed softly by the side.

“Elder.” The elder lifted his head, and the moment his gaze landed on Cang Lan, Yu Xuan put down her hand. She then moved a white piece belonging to the elder on the chessboard.

“Elder, there are quite a number of Berserkers who would like to greet you. Would you let them meet you in the next few days?”

Cang Lan’s expression remained the same. Not a single hint of change of emotion could be detected on her. She asked the elder with a gentle demeanor and looked incredibly respectful.

“You... can make the arrangements as you like.”

The elder smiled amicably. As he spoke, he instinctively wanted to lower his head to look at the chessboard, but at that moment, a smile bloomed on Xu Hui’s face while she was beside Su Ming. She swept her gaze past Cang Lan and Yu Xuan before she spoke.

“Elder, you will need some time before you can continue with the game. Why don’t you tell us things about Su Ming when he was a child?”

“That’s right, elder. Tell us about his childhood! Don’t you agree, big sister Cang Lan?” Yu Xuan said quickly. The three of them did not differentiate themselves by age, but both Yu Xuan and Xu Hui referred to the gentle and elegant Cang Lan as their big sister.

Xu Hui was the second. Regardless of whether it was her personality or the words she usually used, Yu Xuan gave off the feeling that she was young, which was why she was the youngest among the three women.

The elder laughed. He no longer looked at the chessboard but instead lifted his head to look at the three women beside Su Ming. His smile became even more kindly. The three women each had their own talents, and all of them were geni.

He looked at them, then looked at Su Ming, who had closed his eyes at that moment, and he joyfully told them some of the more interesting things Su Ming had done when he was younger.

But he did not know that the game had been changed, causing Su Ming’s original disadvantage to change into an advantage.

Su Ming did not pay any attention to any of it. At the instant he closed his eyes, he spread his divine sense, turned it into his will, and then... sent it to descend in the Fourth True World.

The galaxy there was filled with chaos. Wills belonging to Antecedental Spirits filled the entire True World, and they brought with them the desire to wreak havoc and madness. They had arrogance that made it feel as if they wanted to tear apart the world. When they rose in the galaxy, they filled up the Fourth True World and brought forth a bloody massacre.

The killing even extended to Sacred Yin, and the Emperor of Abyss’ True World. In fact, there were even some Antecedental Spirits who had come from the Fourth True World to True Morning Dao World. As they laughed madly while roaring, they engaged in a fight to the death against people from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. Once anyone died, the Antecedental Spirits would immediately suck in a breath to absorb the dead cultivators into their bodies, devouring them.

In truth... the Antecedental Spirits who had their seals broken and were released by the Fourth True World did not even care whether their enemies were from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. The cultivators from the other True Worlds also became their targets, as if they were their food.

With every cultivator they devoured, they would become stronger. Because of it, the Antecedental Spirits who rushed out of the Fourth True World stirred up another disaster in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

The cultivators from Arid Triad, Dark Dawn, and Saint Defier continued dying one after another. The Antecedental Spirit's release and slaughter during that year caused Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos to be slightly different. Su Ming could also sense that as the people died, the power of his own will rose by quite a large margin. Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos was filled with a brutality and an invisible power that could make people descend into madness.

It was as if a bloody flower that would only appear in the apocalypse was blooming and spreading out. Su Ming could sense that the feeling of Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos moving during the past ten years was faster than before the war began, and it was faster by seventy years.

Everything seemed to happen faster by seven times!

Only by doing so could Arid Triad make the disaster that would originally require three thousand something years to appear when the four wings overlap to be reduced to only five hundred years.

As he watched Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos' change, Su Ming filed all of this information away as if he had come to understand everything. His heart was calm, and not a single ripple appeared due to the things happening around him. He knew that one hundred years later, he would have to face a disaster, and that disaster would come from Arid Triad.

If Su Ming could not get through the disaster, there would be no future to speak of, but if he could survive, then five hundred years later, Arid Triad's disaster would arrive, and during the instant the wings overlapped, Su Ming would Possess Arid Triad.

He would not choose to cooperate with Arid Triad. Forget the choice Arid Triad had provided to him. That was not a choice, but a seed planted at the bottom of his heart. One hundred years later, when the seed grew, it would bring him a life-threatening disaster that would end up with him being sealed.

Even if Arid Triad truly wanted to work with Su Ming, Su Ming would still not make that choice, because... it was as the young man had said—their paths were different!

When anyone reached Su Ming and Arid Triad's level of cultivation, there was no longer a distinction between good and bad between them, and neither were there any sort of grudge... A battle of wills would happen due to their paths being different and because there was little common ground for understanding between them.

In truth, Su Ming was originally not certain of this either... but he had cast three deep glances at the ancient tree on the capital planet of the Emperor of Abyss' True World before he left, and those three glances had allowed him to understand the meaning of preordained fate.

Su Ming would not hide from the promise he made with Arid Triad under the ancient tree one hundred years later. He would go!

On the vast sea below the ancient tree, the shades of blue and green seemed to connect with the sky. The blue was the ocean, and green was the tree that seemed to melt the line separating the ocean and the sky so that it could make the sky truly connect with the sea and make the sea turn into one with the tree...

‘Perhaps they had always been one...’

Su Ming sighed in his heart. He focused his mind and stopped thinking about those things. Instead, as his will spread out, he had it filled all of Arid Triad. Even if True Sacred Yin World’s will did not belong to Su Ming, even if the Fourth True World’s will tried to reject him, Su Ming had possessed four Great True Worlds, so he could instantly suppress the two great wills, causing them... to not dare reveal their presences. Instead, they allowed Su Ming to sweep through their True Worlds with his will.

In a galaxy to the east of the Fourth True World was a huge swamp. A bloody stench spread out from within it. Submerged in the putrid water were countless corpses of cultivators from Dark Dawn, Saint Defier, as well as Arid Triad. There were a few dozen corpses belonging to disciples from Ninth Summit’s branch sects as well.

Those people had already lost their lives, and as their bodies were submerged in the swamp, they slowly rotted away and absorbed. Surrounding the swamp were nearly thirty thousand cultivators from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. They people had cautious looks, and under the lead of three Antecedental Spirits from their Expanse Cosmoses, they were engaged in a battle of divine abilities against the swamp.

When booming sounds echoed in the air, a face showed up from within the swamp. There was a ferocious look on it when it looked at the cultivators before it.

“All... of you... must die!”

A muffled roar reverberated through space. The swamp swiftly grew larger, but at that moment, a will so great that it caused all thirty thousand cultivators’ minds to instantly go blank and made the three Antecedental Spirits belonging to Dark Dawn and Saint Defier to instantly feel as if their souls had frozen up appeared. When they lost their consciousness, the huge swamp shuddered, and the face on it swiftly looked up to glare at space. The being’s pupils shrank, and shock appeared on his face.

“Who are you?! WHO ARE YOU??!!”

When his shouts echoed in space, a cold harrumph could be heard. Immediately after, a hand appeared in space. It was not big, and it pushed down lightly, but the swamp immediately roared. It started drying up, and a large number of cracks instantly

appeared. Banging sounds reverberated through space, and nearly four-tenths of the swamp crumbled.

"I, Su Ming, do not care about you killing the cultivators from Dark Dawn, Saint Defier, or Arid Triad... but provoking Ninth Summit is not allowed. Do not repeat your mistake."

Su Ming's voice traveled into the ears of the Antecedental Spirit in the swamp, intimidating him greatly and causing the swamp to not dare to show even a hint of struggle or resistance as it trembled.

During that moment, Ninth Summit was branded deeply into the divine sense of the Antecedental Spirit in the swamp, and it became a taboo!

Su Ming's terrifying might had shocked the Antecedental Spirit. No matter how mad he was, in the face of the absolute power that could destroy him with a flip of his hand, he could only lower his head and show respect.

To the west of the Fourth True World,, a crazed laughter shook the sky. A person with a body like a normal person but with two legs that were one hundred feet long walked through the galaxy. His body parts seemed incompatible with each other, and he looked incredibly bizarre, but there was a presence that would bring terror to others spreading out from his body.

The person's hair was a mess, and his upper body was uncovered. When he took a step forward, he smiled in a way that held a hint of lust. He was chasing after eight cultivators.

Among the eight of them, three came from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier, four from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, and one was a female cultivator who had entered Ninth Summit's branch sect from True Sacred Yin World three years ago.

The long-legged strange man laughed and lifted his right hand, which immediately shot forward. As if a vacuum had been formed, the three cultivators from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier were instantly pulled to him. When they fell into his palm, he crushed them, and the three turned into minced meat with a bang.

The huge hand appeared again, and the minced meat turned into the most aggressive Enchanted Vessel that charged towards the remaining five cultivators. As the four from the Emperor of Abyss' True World screamed in pain, the minced meat shot through their bodies, and they became a part of that minced meat.

As for the female cultivator from Ninth Summit, her face was pale when she was seized by the strange man's right hand, which was now several times larger than before. She was brought before him, and the lust in the strange man's eyes grew even greater.

"Not bad, you can be a furnace."

The strange man laughed loudly and tossed the woman into his sleeve. In that seemingly small sleeve were thousands of female cultivators he had captured.

He turned around and was just about to leave when he suddenly jolted. His expression instantly became grave. He narrowed his eyes and fixed his stare on a white-robed figure who had appeared behind him at some unknown point of time.

“An Antecedental Spirit such as you should not be sealed. You should be wiped off straight away.”

Su Ming frowned. When he said those words, he took a step forward. The strange man roared. He could sense a powerful threat to his life coming from Su Ming. But when he was about to retreat, Su Ming took a step forward and moved past him.

As Su Ming left into the distance, the giant experienced a full body shudder. His head swiftly separated from his body, which withered right after. His sleeve was torn into shreds, and when the thousands of female cultivators in it fled, the strange man's body crumbled with a bang to turn into waves of aura that fused into the women, becoming the greatest serendipity that could make their cultivation bases increase by leaps and bounds.

Chapter 1305: The Seventh Reversed Spirit!

It was Su Ming's punishment for the strange man.

A similar scene appeared in hundreds of places at the same time in the Fourth True World... Based on how they acted, some of the Antecedental Spirits were wiped off by Su Ming, some were warned, but none were exempted.

The Antecedental Spirits released from the Fourth True World were connected to each other through their minds. When some of them were wiped off by Su Ming, all the Antecedental Spirits could sense their deaths clearly when they died.

They would not have been too shocked if not many of them died, but in a few short few breaths, a total of thirty-two Antecedental Spirits had been wiped off. The shock of this incident intimidated the other Antecedental Spirits.

The moment they noticed it, the surviving Antecedental Spirits immediately sensed Su Ming's terrifying will around them. They all received punishments of varying heaviness without exception, and all of them felt chills run down their spines.

Ninth Summit's name was carved deeply into their minds.

As Su Ming's will descended in True Sacred Yin World, the dozen something Antecedental Spirits who had their seals released felt their hearts tremble. No matter what they had been doing, all of them felt a layer of ice envelop them.

Almost at the same time, Su Ming's words reached their ears.

"Such maliciousness and brutality should be wiped off!"

As they echoed in the mind of every single Antecedental Spirit in True Sacred Yin World, they immediately sensed the presence of one of their companions disappearing. It symbolized death.

"Since this is your first offense, I will let you off, but do not repeat your mistake!"

"You will be warned once for killing for fun!"

"For your extreme brutality, you will be wiped off!"

Su Ming's voice echoed in the air for a few breaths, and a total of three Antecedental Spirits were wiped off. The intimidating force formed by the shock instantly caused fear to appear on the faces of the Antecedental Spirits who were in True Sacred Yin World.

"If any of you dare provoke Ninth Summit in the slightest bit, you will be wiped off!" When Su Ming's final words echoed in the Antecedental Spirits' ears, all the Antecedental Spirits in True Sacred Yin World sank into silence as they sensed Su Ming's terrifying might and domineering will.

It was the same in the Emperor of Abyss' True World. As Su Ming's will descended and left, four of the Antecedental Spirits who had surged into this True World disappeared for all time.

The last was True Morning Dao World. There were thirteen Antecedental Spirits who had stepped into this True World to cause chaos. The method Su Ming used to handle them was completely different compared to what he used in the other True Worlds.

He did not say anything to them, but instead had his will sweep through the True World, and when booming sounds reverberated through space, the thirteen Antecedental Spirits who were already terrified by their companions' continuous deaths were all destroyed. Neither their souls nor bodies survived.

Dragons had taboos, and Su Ming's taboo could be said to be True Morning Dao World. He would not allow any accidents to happen in this place, which was why all who dared invade would die without question.

All of this might have seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, it only lasted for a time it takes half an incense stick to burn. When Su Ming opened his eyes while sitting beside the chessboard, his expression was one of indifference.

He watched his elder talk about the interesting things that had happened to him while he was younger and Yu Xuan, Cang Lan and Xu Hui listen to him with great interest. A smile appeared on Su Ming's face. When he lowered his head to look at the chessboard, he picked up a black piece, but he was suddenly taken aback.

One white piece was not in the position he remembered it to be... When a rather strange look appeared on his face, the bald crane lifted its head from the ground and cast a glance at Su Ming in a lackadaisical manner before it looked at Yu Xuan. A thought appeared in its head, but just as it was about to show off its knowledge in a manner of currying his favor, Yu Xuan suddenly turned her head sideways with a grin and cast the bald crane a glance.

This glance caused the bald crane to shudder. It could clearly sense a warning from Yu Xuan's gaze... and it quickly steeled its expression before swiftly running to the Abyss Dragon.

As for the Abyss Dragon, it was staring at the lake water while daydreaming. Occasionally, it would growl at the surface of the water. When the bald crane came over, it struck the dragon's head fiercely.

"What are you looking at? Darn it all."

The Abyss Dragon tapped its head and spoke as if it had suffered greatly. "You hit me again... I... I seem to have seen another me in the lake..."

It constantly thought that it had become much dumber than before, but if anyone else had their head continuously struck for the one thousand years, the repeated concussions would cause them to do actions that other people would not understand...

"Y-y-you... You stupid dragon, the one in the surface of the lake is you—Hah..."

The bald crane shook its head and cast a pitying look at the Abyss Dragon. It began mumbling in its mind that if it ever found anyone unpleasant in its eyes, it would strike their heads repeatedly for a whole year.

When it thought of this, the bald crane's eyes immediately brightened, and it grew slightly smug, as if it had thought of a divine ability that possessed unparalleled might. At that moment, while it was feeling all smug, it did not notice that the reflection of the Abyss Dragon in the lake had a similarly smug look on its honest-looking face.

'Heh heh, does this stupid crane really think I don't know? I, the great Abyss Dragon, is much smarter than it. It thinks I'm stupid? Well, I'm just toying with it.'

Time passed in this warmth that was something Su Ming had not encountered for a long time. A year later... Su Ming had already stayed in Ninth Summit for a total of ten years.

Su Ming did not continue living peacefully in Ninth Summit after that. Instead, he chose to leave. He had to go and complete the third matter he had decided upon—to go to Dark Dawn to take a look at his mother's race... and also search for his Master, Tian Xie Zi's tracks.

Perhaps he could also find the God of Berserkers, Lie Shan Xiu.

On that day, Su Ming's elder stood outside his house and watched the sky. He seemed to be able to see Su Ming turning his head back to cast a glance at Ninth Summit while he was in the galaxy.

"Your path is still very long... but I am already very satisfied to be able to see you having grown this much..." the elder murmured.

The smile on his face became even more kindly and amiable, but there was a faint hint of aura of death within it. It... was already time for him to return to the embrace of earth. He had lived through countless cycles of life and death, and finally, in this cycle, he completed his wish.

Su Ming turned his head around to look at Ninth Summit while he was in the galaxy. He saw his senior brothers, Yu Xuan, Xu Hui, and Cang Lan, and also saw the aura of death about his elder's body. The presence was not thick, but as time passed, it would become thicker.

Being born, growing old, getting sick, and dying was a process in life that could not be changed... but perhaps the disaster that would occur five hundred years later would allow it all to become different.

In silence, Su Ming turned around and walked into space. The bald crane followed behind him, occasionally turning its head to look at the Abyss Dragon. There was a slight reluctance to part on its face, but that reluctance was born due to it not being able to strike the Abyss Dragon's head every single day.

While it was lamenting this fact, it made up its mind that when it went to Dark Dawn, it would find a substitute. It could not let itself get rusty with this powerful divine ability.

The galaxy was boundless, and there was no end to it. Brilliant starlight would occasionally look like embellishments on a picture. No one knew who it was who had drunk wine and accidentally spilled ink on a canvas to draw the galaxy...

Su Ming walked through the galaxy and arrived at Arid Triad's gap in True Morning Dao World. It was the place where Dark Dawn and Saint Defier descended, and it was also the entrance leading to those lands.

The bald crane continued chattering all the way, talking about how it would obtain crystals when it arrived in Dark Dawn. As it spoke, Su Ming stopped moving and turned his head around to look at it.

“Darn it all... When I’m there, I’ll definitely loot all their crystals, I will definitely... Huh?” When the bald crane saw Su Ming turn his head back, it was taken aback. It looked behind it, then turned around to look back at Su Ming.

“What’s wrong?”

Su Ming stared at the bald crane, and a smile appeared on his face.

“Don’t be afraid. I’ll take you there... and no one can stop you from regaining your identity,” Su Ming said softly. When he said those words, the bald crane shuddered, then lowered its head and fell silent.

Its constant rapid speech had allowed Su Ming to see that it was afraid. It was afraid of going to Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. That was not because there was anything terrifying about that place... but because it might be its hometown.

After a long while, when the bald crane lifted its head, the uncaring and unbothered look appeared on its face again. It continued chattering about how it would loot crystals while walking next to Su Ming.

After a long, long time passed, when the bald crane stared at the galaxy in the future, it would try to recall, but it could never be able to find its memories... However, it would still be able to occasionally remember a white-robed figure in the galaxy telling it to not be afraid.

Every single time, it would feel sad, but the source of the sadness it could not find was the melancholy it could never trace back. It could only... stand at the peak of a mountain and look at the galaxy. Even if it had its own sect and it was no longer as obsessed with crystals and even if it was worshiped by countless cultivators... it still tried to search for the past it lost and could never get back.

It could only vaguely remember that there was once a person who brought it to walk through a part of its life...

As the bald crane continued mumbling, Su Ming took it into the distance. He walked to Arid Triad’s gap. The Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei had long since arrived to fulfill his task of meeting Su Ming, which he had received ten years ago. In fact, he had arrived in this place a few months ahead of schedule and had been waiting for Su Ming ever since.

.....

When Su Ming walked towards Arid Triad's gap... there was a vast space located beyond Arid Triad, or rather, there was a vast space beyond the sleeping Harmonious Morus Alba's four wings.

There were no galaxies, only a clouded space that looked like muddled fog that only existed before everything was created.

At that moment, a sudden ray of white light suddenly illuminated everything in every direction, causing the fog to tumble about and avoid it to reveal...

A huge, ring-shaped Feng Shui compass. It was covered in talismans and carvings that could not be counted. They were the ones who emitted the white light and illuminated the empty space.

At that moment, there was a black-robed young man sitting on the Feng Shui compass. He had long black hair and was filled with ghastly aloofness.

In his hands he held a string of pearls. There was a total of nine of them, and six were shining, while the remaining three were dark. However, at that moment, one of the three dark pearls suddenly shone with a faint light. The vague shadow of a crane seemed to be visible in that light...

When the black-robed young man turned the string of pearls in his hand, he slowly lifted his head and looked into a distant space. Over there... was the spot where the nine butterflies once were... and where Harmonious Morus Alba had stopped to rest.

"I've finally... found the seventh Reversed Spirit!"

Chapter 1306: The Bald Crane's Great Enemy

"Greetings, Senior Su. It has been ten years since we met, and your elegance has become even greater than before. Your power has become stronger by more than several fold. You truly make me impressed from the bottom of my heart. In fact, I can often see you in my dreams, and I worship you day and night, hoping that the span of ten years would go by in the blink of an eye, because I would then be able to see you again and personally bear witness to your splendor.

"My admiration towards you can no longer be described by any of the words in this aeon. It comes from my heart, my soul, and is the strongest excitement I, Yan Pei, have ever felt in my life...

“Senior, your figure is as straight as a pine tree, the brilliance of your mind surpasses the light of the galaxy, your...”

Great delight appeared on the face of Yan Pei, who had been waiting at Arid Triad’s gap for some time, the moment he saw Su Ming. He lifted his feet and immediately took a few strides before he wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming to give him a deep bow.

His hands almost touched the tip of his toes when he bowed, and it was an act completely unsightly for a Sovereign of Dawn. Not only did he bow so completely, he had also made sure that his words were spoken incredibly clearly. Each of his sentences contained rich emotion and true zealousness.

Forget whether his words were sincere or fake, just his voice and his words alone showed Yan Pei’s nearly obsequious behavior to Su Ming and how he was currying his favor.

Su Ming cast a glance at Yan Pei and let out a dry cough, cutting off Yan Pei’s words; no one had any idea how long they would have lasted if he let him continue. Yan Pei’s change made sense. In truth, Su Ming was rather unaccustomed to his attitude, but he still quite admired him in his heart.

But before Yan Pei could say anything else, the bald crane suddenly focused its gaze while standing beside Su Ming, and a hint of wariness appeared within it. It felt that the Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei... was too shameless. His level of shamelessness caused the bald crane to be wary of him, but it was also quite amazed.

‘This person... Damn it, is he trying to snatch my position? Or else why would his expression look so familiar? Darn it all, this is an expression only I can put on in front of Su Ming. This shameless Yan Pei, he... he... I will immediately memorize all the words he just said. There are things in this person’s methods of flattery that this great bald crane can learn from.’

The bald crane immediately felt its spirits lift when it made its decision. It was great in this aspect. It was incredibly studios, such as when it saw the Abyss Dragon turn into a dog in the past, it had, in its ignorance, believed that dogs were fiercer, and so it imitated the dragon and turned into a dog.

When it was in the land of Berserkers, it was chased by the birds above the Dead Sea, and hence, it believed they were strong, so it immediately transformed into them and mingled among them happily.

When it was in Black Ink Planet, it saw some of the families receiving much greater responses while they were searching for a wife for their son, which was why it roped in the Abyss Dragon to turn into a beautiful woman and went to each family to deceive

them. All of these things spoke of how eager for knowledge the bald crane was, and right then... its studios nature appeared once more.

Almost at the same time the bald crane became wary, the Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei saw it, and his heart let out a thump. His instincts told him that the bald crane in front of him was definitely a great enemy of his.

It was not the type of enemy mentioned in battles, where they had to fight each other to the death, but was the greatest competition for the position of Su Ming's right hand man, which Yan Pei was determined to gain!

'Damn it, why does Senior Su have a crane like this by his side? Look at it, that sharp beak and monkey-like cheeks, that bald body... It's clearly what is reflected on its external appearance once it has trained its sleaziness and shamelessness to a certain degree!

'This crane... is a great enemy of mine!'

The Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei immediately carved the image of the bald crane in his mind, but he did not show any sign of his thoughts on his face. still kept the obsequious look. If any cultivator from Dark Dawn or Saint Defier saw him at that moment, they would definitely be struck dumb, because they could not imagine that the usually callous and arrogant Yan Pei... would be able to have such an expression.

"Senior, you are finally here. I have been waiting for this day for a very long time. Senior, ever since I met you, I felt that my status as a Sovereign of Dawn is no longer interesting. I came to a swift realization and will give up on my status as the Sovereign of Dawn all so that I can follow you and be your attendant.

"Senior, you only need to point forward, and this young Yan Zi will immediately charge forth. Even if the way forward is filled with mountains of blades and seas of fire, this young Yan Zi will not even frown. Senior, as this young Yan Zi is so sincere in his request, please allow him to follow you. Please grant his request..."

The Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei gritted his teeth. The bald crane's appearance had made him feel incredibly threatened, which was why he changed his original plan, and as he spoke, he fell to his knees and worshiped Su Ming, completely giving up on his status as a Sovereign of Dawn.

The more callous and aloof a person appeared to be, the greater the effect of this action would be. The higher the status a person possessed, the greater the sincerity they would present to others.

Yan Pei knew about this clearly. In truth, during his earlier days, he had acted this way, and his personality was directly related to why he was capable of becoming a Sovereign of Dawn. He would usually present himself as an aloof and arrogant person, but when

he ran into life-threatening situations, he would immediately change his attitude. He was the true definition of great adaptability. He did not even feel a single bit of discomfort in his heart or that he had wronged his status.

To Yan Pei, dignity was something that could be used to exchange for certain things...

However, once he became strong and gained the position of the Sovereign of Dawn, he had believed that there was no longer anyone who could make him do such a thing, unless they were the sleeping old monsters, but those old monsters were not awake, and Yan Pei had sealed this divine ability he believed was the greatest in the universe under layers of dust.

Up till then, that is. After personally witnessing and experiencing how terrifying Su Ming was, he naturally presented this divine ability he had practiced for years and showed... his true nature.

Yan Pei's words stunned Su Ming in the word's truest sense. Flattery that continued endlessly was something Su Ming had never heard before even from the bald crane. In fact, it could be said that it was... the first time he had faced something like that.

Even if he had heard of it before, he had not paid attention to it, but right then, the person before his eyes... was one of Dark Dawn's Sovereigns of Dawn, which was why Su Ming was truly and completely taken aback. His mind had actually gone blank at that moment, which was a rare event.

When Yan Pei saw Su Ming's expression, he was also momentarily stunned. In truth, he had only spoken one-tenth of the flattering words he had prepared in his heart. He had thought that the bald crane was a great enemy of his and that Su Ming was already used to this sort of flattery, which was why he had been pondering over how he should change his words so that the effect of his flattery would be stronger.

However, when he saw that Su Ming was stunned, Yan Pei immediately felt great delight in his heart. He sighed in his heart and believed that the bald crane was still unable to compare to him. Just as he was about to continue speaking so that he could strike while the iron was hot, the bald crane jumped to its feet, alarmed.

"Bullsh*t!" it shouted as if it was exasperated.

The bald crane might not have feathers, but it had some fine hairs on its skin. At that moment, all of them had stood up, and with great hostility, it glared at Yan Pei while screeching in a piercing manner.

"Su Ming, don't believe in this wretch's words. He... he said that he would rush into mountains of blades and seas of fire without even frowning, but with his level of cultivation, those mountains of blades and seas of fire he spoke of would be nothing!"

"Those mountains of blades and seas of fire I spoke of were just an example, brother bald crane. Don't be hung up on that now. Do you know what is an example? Oh well, you should not have come to understand something like this just yet. It's fine, when we have the chance in the future, I will teach you," Yan Pei said without hesitation.

"Y-y-you... I went through grave dangers in the land of Berserkers with Su Ming!"

"If I, Yan Pei, am safe in the future while Senior Su is injured, then I will stand to be accused by the public!"

"Su Ming and I were exiled to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence!" The bald crane was completely livid. It flapped its wings, and a great presence immediately erupted from its body.

"I will definitely fight beside Senior Su in the future. Even if the enemy is Dark Dawn, I will definitely not hesitate with my attacks!"

Yan Pei glared at the bald crane. The man and crane attacked each other with words to show their loyalty.

As he watched it, Su Ming did not know whether he wanted to laugh or cry. Once he cast a glance at Yan Pei, he let out a dry cough, swung his arm, and immediately separated the duo, who had come closer to each other and were about to let their cultivation bases erupt from their bodies to duke it out against each other.

"Yan..."

"This young Yan Zi is here!" An excited expression appeared on Yan Pei's face, and he knelt down to Su Ming again.

"Heh heh, Yan Zi... The word for swallow, huh? That's it, you're a swallow!" The bald crane seemed to have thought of something. A sleazy look suddenly appeared on its face, and it glared fiercely at Yan Pei while it started cursing him maliciously in its heart.

'Swallow, don't blame me for being ruthless, you're just too cunning. You are the one who forced my hand. I'm going to use that Stupid Claw on you so that you will become the same as the Abyss Dragon!'

The bald crane's fierce expression immediately made Yan Pei wary of it in his heart while he wondered whether the bald crane had any powerful skills at its disposal...

Su Ming was rather unused to this, so he let out a fake cough and spoke to Yan Pei to distract him. "Alright, enough! Yan... Hurry up and lead the way to Dark Dawn's camp!"

"I understand!"

Yan Pei's spirits lifted. He immediately got up, formed a seal with his right hand, then pointed at Arid Triad's gap, which was not far away from them. The gap immediately shuddered, and a huge runic symbol appeared on it. The runic symbol flashed a few times before it shuddered and stopped moving.

Su Ming's expression became one of calmness as he stared at Arid Triad's gap. He had personally witnessed the gap being formed in the past. At that time, he had not expected that one day he would step into Dark Dawn and Saint Defier through it.

"Master..."

A nostalgic look appeared in Su Ming's eyes, but he did not hesitate and took a step forward to step into Arid Triad's gap. Behind him were the bald crane and Yan Pei. They flew out at the same time, as if they were competing against each other to be the first to follow Su Ming. They turned into two long arcs and instantly... disappeared into Arid Triad's gap with Su Ming!

Chapter 1307: Dark Dawn, Saint Defier

Dark Dawn and Saint Defier were on the second wing occupied by Arid Triad among the four wings of Harmonious Morus Alba. It was a huge Expanse Cosmos, and while it was not like the first Expanse Cosmos belonging to Arid Triad, the overall area was about the size of three True Worlds in Arid Triad.

After all... besides the four Great True Worlds, Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos also had the Barren Lands of Divine Essence as well as other empty spots at its borders. In fact, Arid Triad had nine True Worlds during the previous era.

In the second Expanse Cosmos belonging to Arid Triad, which was a small wing under the two big wings belonging to Harmonious Morus Alba, Dark Dawn and Saint Defier each occupied half of the universe.

It might seem like a lot, but it was not in comparison. However, Dark Dawn and Saint Defier referred to these areas as their camps because they each occupied 180 Expanse Cosmoses in that universe.

There was a total of 360 Expanse Cosmos, and they were all gathered in Arid Triad's second universe. They were densely packed together and separated by borders...

They had formed such a unique camp built by multiple Expanse Cosmoses because Saint Defier and Dark Dawn had moved there during the second era of the current aeon. They preserved their cultivation systems and methods from the second era and

continued training in them. They also continued to use the structure of the ancient countries formed by different tribes during that time.

Each Expanse Cosmos within Dark Dawn and Saint Defier's 360 Expanse Cosmoes belonged to a tribe who had occupied it and grown in it. Each tribe occupied one Expanse Cosmos, and the two camps had even set up an Expanse Cosmos Conference.

This so-called Expanse Cosmos Conference was built by the Tribe Elders of the different tribes from the 180 Expanse Cosmoes of each camp. The three Sovereigns of Dawn were among the leaders, and they were the highest form of authority in their camp.

There were three Sovereign Expanse Cosmoes and a Central Expanse Cosmos in Dark Dawn's camp. These four Expanse Cosmoes formed the heart of Dark Dawn. The three Sovereign Expanse Cosmoes formed a triangle that surrounded the Central Expanse Cosmos.

The Central Expanse Cosmos was the core of all of Dark Dawn's camp. Every Expanse Cosmos Conference held by the Tribe Elders of the 180 Expanse Cosmoes would be held in this place to determine all the important matters regarding Dark Dawn's camp.

As for the three Sovereigns of Dawn, they were not the same people throughout the ages. They were chosen by the tribes, and they would take up their positions for thirty thousand years. Once they were over, another election would be held, and whether the previous candidates could remain as Sovereigns of Dawn would depend on their strength, luck, and the level of support they had from the tribes.

Of course, the main focus was on their levels of cultivation. All candidates had to be in Avacaniya Realm before they could run for the position of a Sovereign of Dawn. That was why over the course of countless years, Sovereigns of Dawn did not change often... unless at some point in time, a new person reached Avacaniya Realm!

It was the case for Yan Pei in the past. As he fought for the position, he had to give up many things before he could finally take over the previous Sovereign of Dawn and reach the top.

As time passed, the thirty thousand years had almost come to their end. It would have been fine if no other cultivators in Avacaniya Realm appeared... but this time, there were two who had appeared in Dark Dawn's camp!

One of them was Hong Zhu, who was the person Yan Pei had replaced in the past, and the other was the genius Huang Tai who appeared from Central Hua Tribe.

Those two people clearly intended to compete for the title of the Sovereign of Dawn, setting things in motion in secret in all of Dark Dawn ... However, the invasion of Arid

Triad had turned the world upside down. At the very least, the tide of change could not stir during war, or else, with how Saint Defier had been lurking around by the side waiting to strike, the cooperation between the tribes in Dark Dawn would instantly crumble.

In a boundless desert in the Expanse Cosmos belonging to Yan Pei among the three Sovereign Expanse Cosmoses was an oasis. At that moment, there was a man and a woman sitting by a table there. Their gazes were on a black jade slip on the table, but their expressions betrayed their uncertainty.

“This is the jade slip Yan Pei sent to us a few months ago. That... terrifying existence is about to arrive.”

The desert breeze came blowing towards them. It was very dry, but when it reached the oasis, the wind became gentle, and it was even refreshing when it landed on the people’s bodies. It lifted the woman’s dark locks to reveal a petite face that could make a person’s heart race.

She was Dark Dawn’s Sovereign of Dawn Zi Ruo from East Extraction Tribe.

She was dressed in a purple long robe, and her black hair spilled over her shoulders. She had an incredibly beautiful face, and there were two purple crystals at the center of her brow, which meant she was the famous Sovereign of Dawn Zi Suo.

When she spoke, she lifted her head and averted her gaze from the jade slip to look towards the white-haired old man sitting on the other side of the table.

The old man’s eyes burned brightly, and he had an awe-inspiring expression. When he opened his eyes, all people could see that there were vertical pupils in his eyes. One of them was yellow, and the other red, causing him to look incredibly bizarre. Even if he was sitting idly, he gave off the feeling that he could change the laws in the entire world.

He was the strongest Sovereign of Dawn in Dark Dawn... Cang San Nu!

“This person has the power to kill those in Avacaniya Realm... He has fused with the will of a True World in Arid Triad and even sealed a powerful warrior from the previous aeon who managed to wake up through some unknown method...

“His presence caused Yan Pei to remember those sleeping old people... The strongest of this aeon, huh?”

When the old man said those words faintly, his pupils shrank, but anyone could see the faint shadow of a fighting spirit that was only a spark away from burning.

“I wonder if I activate all my cultivation base and release my seal, would I be able to kill this person? If I could truly kill him, would I be able to reach another breakthrough in

terms of my level of cultivation?!” the old man said hoarsely, and the fighting spirit in his eyes grew stronger.

Zi Ruo frowned while casting a glance at the old man.

“But Yan Pei seems to want us to be polite and respectful towards this person, and we are supposed to cooperate with him in everything that he wants to do in this place, saying that it will only be beneficial for Dark Dawn and that we will suffer no losses. In fact, this may be a chance for us to become the masters of Saint Defier,” Zi Ruo said softly.

“A chance? That Yan Pei’s desire to serve is simply coming to surface again. Is it really that difficult to kill someone in Avacaniya Realm?” The old man lowered his head and cast a cold glance at Zi Ruo.

Zi Ruo fell silent.

“I, too, can kill those in Avacaniya Realm. I have even... killed three powerful warriors from the previous aeon, while he had only managed to seal one. If that person didn’t bother to come to Dark Dawn, I would have ignored him, but since he is here, then he will be my prey. Once I kill him, I will henceforth be known as Si Nu [1]!” The old man swung his arm and stood up.

“This matter is decided.”

Resolution appeared on the old man’s face. As he spoke, he stepped into space, leaving behind the Sovereign of Dawn Zi Ruo. She stared at the jade slip on the table and sighed in her heart.

‘If a person is too confident in themselves, they will not be able to see their real strength clearly. The three powerful warriors from the previous aeon Cang San Nu killed had already given up on eternal life and separated their minds and souls on their own. They were people who had harbored the intent to die since the start.

‘And the powerful warrior from the previous aeon who was sealed mentioned in Yan Pei’s jade slip... was clearly one of the incredibly powerful kind!

‘Cang San Nu may go seek his own death. My tribe and the other tribes who have affiliated themselves to me must not offend that Su Ming!

‘But...’

Zi Ruo gritted her teeth, got up, and moved, disappearing from the oasis in the galaxy. When she was in midair, she stopped moving, and a strange light appeared in her eyes when a sudden thought struck her. Her expression gradually calmed, but the light in her eyes grew brighter.

‘Since this person is so strong and Yan Pei said he is the strongest in this aeon... then if I can have a child with someone as powerful as he is... the child born of our blood will definitely have no limits to his future as well!’

When she thought of this, Zi Ruo’s face turned redder. She never had a partner in her path of cultivation, and she had always believed that she did not need one. However, in the depths of her heart, she had always wanted to have her own children, and it was a regret she always had.

However, when she cast her eyes over the entire universe, she found no man that would fit her, and that included Cang San Nu. Yet now, Su Ming’s name appeared in her mind.

‘But an old monster like him would definitely not agree to this sort of matter... I will need to think of a way to do this.’

Zi Ruo was tempted by her thought. Once the idea was born in her head, she could not dispel it no matter what she did, and it became even more prominent in her mind. The feeling of danger from scheming against a powerful warrior caused Zi Ruo to suck in a deep breath. An indistinct shadow appeared behind her, and it was clearly the image of a lotus flower with a white fox sitting on it. It looked vivid and alive...

Determination swiftly appeared on her face. She moved and disappeared into the sky.

At the same time, within Saint Defier’s camp in Arid Triad’s second Expanse Cosmos was the exact same jade slip placed before three people. One of them was an old man, another a woman, and the last a middle-aged man.

The old man was Lord Saint Defier Xuan Jiu. While Su Ming had never seen the woman personally, he was definitely not unfamiliar with her. She was... Lord Saint Defier Fei Hua, who had sent her ring into Arid Triad. She was also the one who had caused the bald crane to have confusion and a complicated look appear on its face all those years ago.

As for the middle-aged man, he had a calm look on his face, but there was a hint of a darkness in his eyes. As he stared at the jade slip, he let out a cold harrumph.

“The strongest of this aeon... Isn’t that Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei exaggerating things? If any of the seniors sleeping in the valley woke up, they too could be known as the strongest of this aeon.” The middle-aged man was the third Lord Saint Defier of Saint Defier’s camp. His name was Xiao Song.

“Yan Pei might seem aloof, but in truth, he is a very cautious person. He has always been able to make the correct assessment of any situation... He sent us this jade slip several months ago to tell us that this Su Ming was about to come. He... must surely

harbor some malicious intent, but based on this, I can tell that he is incredibly confident in Su Ming. Yan Pei intends to use his strength to pressure us.”

Xuan Jiu sighed softly. When he spoke hoarsely, a hint of determination appeared on his face.

“Oh well, then let me make some calculations to see just how this Su Ming will pose a threat to us!”

Xuan Jiu’s eyes shone. When he lifted his right hand, nine beast bones not uniform in size appeared on his palm. He struck them with his left hand, then swiftly closed his eyes. He executed his inborn divine ability, intending to gain a premonition about Su Ming.

Xiao Song immediately snapped into attention and looked over with a look of concentration. He knew how powerful Xuan Jiu’s Art was, and even those sleeping old monsters could have their preordained fates predicted by him. Xuan Jiu... had never failed in his Art.

Only Fei Hua had a look of confusion on her face. She constantly looked into the distance, and for some reason... her heart trembled slightly, as if something that was the most important thing to her in her life had appeared in the Expanse Cosmos...

Chapter 1308: This Presence... Came from the Universe Beyond

137th Expanse Cosmos was among the 180 Expanse Cosmoses of Dark Dawn. It was located far away from Saint Defier’s border, and it was also far away from Arid Triad’s gap. It was on the other side of Dark Dawn.

The Expanse Cosmos belonged to a race named Bear Charters. They occupied this one Expanse Cosmos, and they had grown and prospered in this place since they had inherited their legacy from the second era. There were hundreds of thousands of people in this race, so it was not really big, but not small either.

The 136th Expanse Cosmos was known as Bear Chart Expanse Cosmos, and Bear Chart Tribe was its master.

There were three altars that eternally existed in the boundless galaxy within Bear Chart Expanse Cosmos. They floated about but did not move themselves, and it had been so for countless years. Bear Chart Tribe had set down seals and Runes around the three altars. They slowly rotated around the altars, turning the place into forbidden ground.

They protected them as if this was the mission of Bear Chart Tribe, and they had kept it up to that date.

The three altars looked incredibly old. One of them was even largely damaged. It exuded an air of ancientness, as if it was falling apart. There was a huge crack in its center, and it looked like it went through the entire altar. If anyone stood on the altar and lowered their heads, they would be able to see the galaxy under it.

The crack might have gone through the entire altar, but it seemed like there was some sort of strange power contained in it, which prevented the altar from falling apart. Instead, the two parts of the altar seemed to be attracted to each other. They were stuck to each other, refusing to move.

Compared to that altar, the third one was kept in a very good condition. On that day, it suddenly shone with a dark light. It instantly grew to a piercing degree and surrounded the entire altar. When it did so, the stone platform that appeared to be sturdy looked as if it had started melting. Once it sank in, some boils even appeared on it, as if it had turned into a swamp.

“Who is it?! Who is talking about the great Grandpa Crane?”

The bald crane shuddered, then popped its head out of the altar. It flapped its wings at full strength, then flew out from the altar that now resembled a swamp. When it flew out, it immediately looked around it with suspicion. The feeling that some strange thoughts had appeared in the depths of its mind once it entered Dark Dawn and Saint Defier’s universe had caused it to attempt to search for them, but no matter what, it could not find the source.

Immediately after, the Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei’s figure appeared on the swamp-like altar. He turned into a long arc and flew out swiftly, then he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply to the altar.

The instant he bowed, Su Ming’s figure slowly appeared from the altar. He walked forth, and the swamp-like stone altar under his foot became something like mud, but when Su Ming put his foot down, the mud split up on its own. It was as if it did not dare to stop Su Ming. When he walked into the galaxy, the altar behind him became solid again, and the dark light dissipated as well.

Su Ming cast a cold glance at the area around him, then directed his gaze on Yan Pei.

“Master, Arid Triad’s gap is in Saint Defier’s camp. If we went there and wished to return to Dark Dawn, we would inevitably run into some disturbances. This is the ancient Relocation Rune connected to Dark Dawn I mentioned earlier,” Yan Pei immediately said in an incredibly respectful voice.

Su Ming swept his gaze over the three altars. Once he cast them a few scrutinizing glances, he noticed a presence that did not belong to this aeon on them. It was clearly a mark that had existed since a long time ago.

However, since one of the altars was preserved in a rather good condition and Yan Pei had secretly transformed it, it became one of the methods for him to save his life. Based on what he said on the way, no matter where he was, as long as he had some time to make preparations, he could immediately Relocate to this place.

This was because he was a member of Bear Chart Tribe. He was a Sovereign of Dawn who came from this tribe, and while he had an Expanse Cosmos belonging to him since he was a Sovereign of Dawn, in the end, he belonged to the Bear Charters.

And only the Bear Charters had had the chance to examine the three altars as well as use them. What concerned Yan Pei though, he was among the best in using them.

Yan Pei was silent for a moment, but even when he spoke, he did not manage to give a detailed description, because even he was not too certain about the matter.

“Master, are you interested in these three altars? Based on Bear Charter Tribe’s years of analysis and observations, we’ve discovered that in the beginning, the first altar seemed to Relocate people to an incredibly far away place, but we don’t know the exact location of that spot.

“Compared to it, the second altar definitely Relocates over a shorter distance, because its aura has disappeared over the years, but based on some of it the tribe had kept, we can sense... a presence that is great and difficult to put to words. It seems like the place with the aura is a place where cultivators are as insignificant as ants.”

Yan Pei only knew that the first and second altars were damaged. Only the third altar could allow them to return to this place from other locations. If they could use it skillfully, it could serve a critical function during dangerous moments!

“If you’ve stored this aura, you can try to gain a sense of it.”

Su Ming averted his gaze from the altar. When he said those words, the invisible Runes and seals around the three altars suddenly shone with a gentle light. When it formed a ripple, dozens of long arcs charged forth with loud whistles. They instantly approached them, then turned into cultivators.

The person in the lead was an incredibly tall and large man. When he moved forward, the shadow of a huge bear seemed to manifest behind him. When he drew closer, he immediately wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply to Yan Pei.

“I, tribe leader of Bear Chart Tribe, greet the Sovereign of Dawn.”

The man's voice was as loud as waves. When it came out in loud booms, the dozens of people behind him wrapped their fists in their palms towards Yan Pei as well. Their greetings were uniform, created a wave of sound that spread through the area.

"How many Star Altar Stones in the tribe still have their whole aura preserved in them?"

The moment the ripples from the Runes and seals spread out, the obsequious look on Yan Pei's face disappeared like the wind, replaced by a dignified and aloof one. It turned him back into the supreme Sovereign of Dawn.

By his side, the bald crane had a scornful look on its face. It turned its head away in contempt, but it was noting down everything Yan Pei did in its heart. Being diligent and thirsting for new knowledge was a very good habit of the bald crane.

"Reporting to the Sovereign of Dawn, there are still... five Star Altar Stones that have been kept in perfect condition. The seals have not been broken, which is why their aura has not spread out. If you require it, I will have someone bring them over," the man from Bear Chart Tribe immediately said respectfully, then cast a brief glance at Su Ming from the corner of his eyes while he began forming assumptions about Su Ming's status in his mind.

"Bring three over. These stones with the ancient aura are limited in number. You will need to keep some in the tribe," Yan Pei said slowly after thinking the matter over.

The man immediately wrapped his fist in his palm and voiced his obedience. He turned around and looked at the old man by his side. With a nod, the old man turned into a bear of one thousand feet in height. He threw his head back and roared before he turned into an afterimage of a long arc and disappeared into the distance.

Su Ming did not bother with the talk between Yan Pei and the people from Bear Chart Tribe. His expression was indifferent. With one step, he moved forward. The bald crane quickly followed behind him, and even cast a smug look at the Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei.

The people from Bear Chart Tribe had never seen Su Ming before, and they could not see any ripples of power from him either, but they knew that since this person came with their Sovereign of Dawn, he was definitely outstanding and not to be offended.

When the cultivators from Bear Chart Tribe looked over, their pupils shrank. Shock appeared on their faces. They could clearly see that once Su Ming came in contact with the ripples from the invisible seals and Runes, the Runes shuddered and disappeared before him as if they were moving back on their own.

Not only did this scene cause the people from Bear Chart Tribe to be shocked, even the Tribe Elder of Bear Chart Tribe turned his head around abruptly because he had sensed it. His pupils shrank, and disbelief appeared on his face.

The Bear Charters had lived around the Runes and had inherited their legacy for a very long time. Over the countless years, each generation of their tribe would perfect the Runes. Their power was perhaps not the offensive type, but their defensive properties made the Runes impossible to break within a short period of time even for the powerful warriors in Avacaniya Realm. But the Runes had not shown even a single fluctuation of power right then. It was as if...

It was as if the Runes had backed away on their own, as if they were a vassal greeting their sovereign. They did not dare to block his path even for a moment... It was this image that had arisen in the mind of the Tribe Elder of Bear Chart Tribe.

His expression changed drastically. As his mind roared, he instinctively asked, "Who-who is he?"

"A person who is unbeatable even if all of Dark Dawn worked together to fight against him... The strongest cultivator in the universe." A fanatic look appeared in Yan Pei's eyes as he mumbled his answer.

When he walked out of the Rune, Su Ming cast a glance at the galaxy in this area. With an indifferent expression on his face, he sent his will sweeping through the area, and it instantly covered the entire Expanse Cosmos.

'It's a very small Expanse Cosmos, and no will has been born here... but there's a clear border between it and the other Expanse Cosmoses. It doesn't seem as if the border was naturally formed. Instead, it looks like... someone used a great divine ability to divide this place and create it.'

When Su Ming's will spread out, Yan Pei flew out from the Rune to land beside him.

"Go and investigate the tunnel all of you from Dark Dawn's camp had set up in the fifth ocean in Arid Triad's Barren Lands of Divine Essence. It might not have been activated, but find out where the people who acted as the garrisons are currently located," Su Ming said faintly, then retrieved his will. He did not forcefully sweep through the 180 Expanse Cosmoses. After all... this place also belonged to Arid Triad.

Yan Pei immediately voiced his obedience. Just as he was about to say something, a long arc came charging from the distance. It was the old man who brought the Star Altar Stones. When he came over, he immediately bowed to Yan Pei and delivered three jade boxes to him.

Su Ming swept his gaze over the jade boxes, and his pupils constricted in a barely noticeable manner. He seized space with his right hand, and the three jade boxes instantly charged towards him. Su Ming caught one of them and squeezed it lightly. The jade box shattered to reveal a stone the size of a fingernail in it.

At the instant the jade box shattered, the stone exuded... an aura that caused a grave look to appear on Su Ming's face!!

He could not identify the aura, but he could deduce at first glance that it did not come from any of the Expanse Cosmoses belonging to Arid Triad, or rather... this aura did not belong to the universe in Harmonious Morus Alba!

The presence... came from the universe beyond!

Chapter 1309: Hmm?

The entire process from the moment the aura appeared to the moment it vanished lasted for ten or so breaths. When the stone the size of a fingernail in his hand no longer had the aura that did not belong to Harmonious Morus Alba in it, Su Ming's eyes flashed.

'A universe beyond Harmonious Morus Alba, huh?'

A contemplative look appeared on his face. When Yan Pei saw Su Ming's expression, he was momentarily stunned. He had sensed the aura in the stone before and only felt that it was unfamiliar. He had sensed nothing else aside from that.

The stone pieces belonged to the second altar, but due to how unique the aura was and how it continued to dissipate, it would completely disappear in a few years. That was why Bear Chart Tribe had used the method to preserve the last batch of the stones.

But their method of preservation was not perfect, which was why once the seal was broken on a stone piece, the people around it would be able to sense its aura for ten breaths, but after that period of time, the aura would completely disappear.

Not only was Yan Pei stunned, the dozens of people from Bear Chart Tribe were also puzzled as to what had happened to Su Ming when they saw the contemplative look on his face.

The aura was just unfamiliar. Aside from that, they had never been able to find out any other benefits to the stones no matter how they investigated it.

'By the looks of it, the second altar is really a Relocation Altar, but it doesn't Relocate to any of the Expanses Cosmoses of Harmonious Morus Alba or Arid Triad. Instead... it can send a person out of the butterfly itself...'

When Su Ming thought of this, his heart trembled. With his level of cultivation, it had become rare for him to be shocked, but the aura and the altar had given him an idea of a possibility!

When the four wings of Harmonious Morus Alba split up and overlapped over the aeons, some cultivators had chosen to survive by fusing with their other selves, some chose to Possess the butterfly, and some people left behind their legacy in All Spirits Hall. However, some people... might have chosen to leave.

They left in the truest meaning of that word. They left Harmonious Morus Alba's body and went to the universe beyond. They went to the space where the other eight butterflies were.

Su Ming did not know what was there. Even after attaining his current level of cultivation, he did not know that he... was as weak as an ant compared to the entire universe beyond.

While he pondered over it, Su Ming's eyes suddenly sparkled, and when he lifted his head, he looked at Yan Pei.

"Bring me all of these stones!"

Yan Pei's heart shuddered. There was a look that allowed neither disagreement nor argument in Su Ming's eyes. It caused him to feel his skin crawl, and he did not dare say no. Without any hesitation, he immediately looked at the Tribe Elder of Bear Chart Tribe.

The expression of the Tribe Elder of Bear Chart Tribe changed several times. He gritted his teeth, then personally flew away. He was gone only for the time it takes for half an incense stick to burn. During that time, everything in the area was silent. No one spoke. Gradually, an unseen mighty pressure filled the area, pushing down on all the people to the point that they felt like they could not circulate their cultivation bases smoothly.

Soon though, the Tribe Elder of Bear Chart Tribe came charging to the area. He did not hand the other two jade boxes to the Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei, but instead personally brought them to Su Ming. Once Su Ming took them, he cast a glance at the man and nodded.

"I will not take the items of your tribe without offering anything back..."

When Su Ming said that, he lifted his right hand and tapped the center of the man's brow. It happened so quickly that before the man registered what had happened, his body shuddered. He took a few staggering steps backwards and coughed up a mouthful of black blood. A large amount of black blood trickled out from his pores.

When the tribe members' expressions changed drastically, the man lifted his hand and gestured for them to not move. He lifted his head with strenuous effort. Crazy delight and excitement appeared on his face, along with disbelief.

He could clearly sense that his blood felt ten times purer than it was in the past. As the black blood trickled out, the shadow of the giant bear behind him instantly grew larger, and it was no longer an illusion. It now looked like it had corporeal form. This could be said to be the greatest serendipity in his life. His blood had been cleansed, causing his cultivation base to increase by leaps and bounds, and his aura also became stronger.

With excitement, the man bowed deeply to Su Ming.

"Thank you... Thank you for your kindness of recreating me, sir!"

When the man said those words in excitement, Su Ming did not speak. Instead, he lowered his head and stared at the jade box in his hand. His expression changed continuously, but after a moment, resolution appeared in his features.

'I'd like to see... just how the world of this aura looks like.'

Su Ming no longer hesitated. He lifted his right hand, and banging sounds immediately echoed in space. Two of the four jade boxes immediately shattered to reveal two stone pieces with uneven surfaces. Thick waves of unfamiliar aura instantly spread out from them.

Su Ming seized space, and the aura immediately gathered together to turn into a small ball that was about to dissipate. When Su Ming grabbed it and pushed it at the center of his brow, he closed his eyes.

His will instantly burst out. Immediately, the small ball at the center of his brow filled with it, and a loud bang shot up in Su Ming's mind. Quickly, with the aura as a lead, his will as a bridge, his Art of Time as the divine ability he needed, he executed the Divine Art of turning back time, bringing forth the effect that only he could bring!

Su Ming's body shuddered. His will seemed to have moved through an innumerable amount of time and swam through aeons until a vast expanse of space appeared before his eyes...

He had seen that space before. It was exactly the same as the universe where the nine butterflies flew.

Endless fog tumbled about continuously in that place. When Su Ming looked towards the fog, he had a strong feeling that the power contained in the fog every single time it tumbled could instantly destroy a powerful warrior in Avacaniya Realm. Even Su Ming himself would not be able to bear the fog for long if he ran into it while it tumbled about.

And this was just the most commonly seen movement of the fog in the vast space!

There were also bolts of lightning swimming in the fog. They twisted about, giving off a feeling of ferocious. They were not truly lightning bolts, but were lines that contained bright and uneven light. However... they caused Su Ming to sense death!

He could clearly tell that with his current body and level of cultivation, his form and soul would be destroyed upon touch. Only his will would remain, but even so, once the lightning bolts touched him a few times, he would definitely end up dead.

Su Ming was silent. He chased after the lead provided by the aura and moved through time, swimming through the tumbling fog and the lightning that was not real... until he saw a butterfly in the fog around him!

It was not Harmonious Morus Alba, because the picture on its wings was different. That butterfly was shuddering and falling apart. There was a Feng Shui compass about its size above it, and it was sucking something out of the butterfly. It continued doing so until the butterfly turned into glittering spots of light. Once they were completely absorbed by the Feng Shui compass, Su Ming saw a black-robed young man sitting cross-legged on the compass while holding a string of pearls in his hand.

"I have the sixth Reversed Spirit now, but I wonder... where the seventh Reversed Spirit hid itself."

At the moment his voice landed in Su Ming's ears, the young man suddenly lifted his head and looked at him. His eyes seemed to contain emptiness itself.

"Hmm?"

Chapter 1310 - My Mind Will Not Be Able to Rest!

A fierce light appeared in the black-robed young man's eyes, as if he could see Su Ming's will moving through time. When Su Ming looked back, his mind shuddered. It was as if the young man's eyes contained some sort of emperor's will.

His gaze was so domineering that it felt as if he was the one who stood supreme over everything in the universe. Those who obeyed him would prosper, and those who went against him would die. If there was even a hint of defiance in anyone towards him, their whole race would immediately be destroyed, and their bloodline would be completely wiped off!

In fact, even if there was no defiance, if anyone showed any hesitation in their words, they would have to face his thunderous rage and killing intent, which would feel as if the universe was about to collapse.

The blatant domineering air felt like it belonged to the peak existence. He had pride, confidence, and an arrogance that he was someone who stood above all lives.

His gaze was cold and aloof, but there seemed to be a voice echoing besides Su Ming's ears at that moment. That voice might not be from the black-robed young man's mouth, but to Su Ming, it felt as if it was truly echoing in his ears right then.

"If you provoke me, no matter where you hide, what level of cultivation you have, what protection you have by your side, whether you come from the past or the future, as long as you provoke me... I will kill you, destroy your race, wipe off your bloodline, and erase all traces of your existence!

"Begone!"

The faint voice had endless aloofness. At the moment it finished speaking, Su Ming's will let out a bang, as if the voice and the aloof expression was a storm that could destroy his will.

That storm went on a rampage in the space where Su Ming was. As his mind roared, his will felt as if it had turned into a huge vortex, and then he was instantly devoured by it.

Su Ming's body jolted. His eyes flew open, and he found himself still in Dark Dawn's camp, the 137th Expanse Cosmos.

Before him was the man from Bear Chart Tribe. Next to him was the Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei. Around him were the people from Bear Chart Tribe. They did not know what Su Ming had experienced, but their faces were pale, and it was especially so for Yan Pei. His level of cultivation was the greatest among the rest, which was why his ability to sense was the strongest too.

During the instant just then, Yan Pei had clearly sensed that Su Ming's presence had vanished and had been filled by an ancient will. He stood there, but had been shrouded by fog. If he had just become indistinct, it would have been nothing, but Yan Pei had clearly sensed an unfamiliar presence appear around Su Ming at that instant. That presence was so strong that it was enough to make all of Dark Dawn, Saint Defier, and Arid Triad tremble.

Yet... while they could sense that presence in this place, not a single bit of its presence spread outwards...

Su Ming knew all of that. He also understood that the black-robed young man's presence could not just make Arid Triad tremble... Even the former complete Harmonious Morus Alba would quiver in fear before him, because Su Ming had personally witnessed another butterfly with the exact same form as Harmonious Morus Alba be easily... devoured by the Enchanted Vessel in the form of a Feng Shui compass.

'Who is he?!'

Su Ming's pupils shrank. That man was the greatest threat he had sensed ever since he became the strongest of his aeon. Before that moment, he had never imagined that there could be such a powerful warrior in the universe!

He exceeded Su Ming's imagination. He fell into silence, but suddenly, a brilliant light flashed in his eyes. This thing was like a thorn embedded into the depths of his heart, and it also let Su Ming himself know... that he could still be afraid.

It was something he had not felt for many years. The last time he felt like that was when he was in Divine Essence Star Ocean. At that time, he had not wanted to succumb to his fear, because he could not lose. If he lost... he would die.

Right then, he could not succumb to his fear either, because when people reached his level of cultivation, once they showed any signs of backing down... they would no longer be themselves.

When the brilliant light shone in his eyes, Su Ming lifted his right hand and swung his arm. Two of the three jade boxes before him immediately shattered, and the ancient aura immediately spread out again.

Su Ming seized space with both hands, and the aura immediately charged towards him to surround him and form a vortex. It rotated swiftly, and the ancient presence of time grew stronger within it.

As Su Ming stared at the vortex, determination appeared on his face.

'If I give up on this just like that, my heart will be filled with indignation!

'If my heart is filled with indignation, my thoughts will not be clear!

'If my thoughts are not clear... then my mind will not be able to rest!'

A ferocious look appeared on Su Ming's face, which was the first time since his will had been perfected. It made Yan Pei's heart tremble. He had never seen such an expression on Su Ming's face before, and it made him feel as if his heartbeat was about to freeze.

If he was in such a state, then it was even more so for the other people from Bear Chart Tribe. They were all intimidated and stunned by Su Ming's expression. Their minds instantly went blank, and they lost their ability to think.

'If my heart is filled with indignation, if my thoughts are not clear, if my mind cannot rest easy, I shall break this state!'

Killing intent appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He lifted his right hand and swiftly seized the space in the direction of the vortex. It swiftly shrank, and when Su Ming held it in his hand, it became the size of an egg. He then placed it at the center of his brow without any hesitation.

At the instant he pushed his hand, Su Ming's mind let out a bang. Everything in his field of vision turned into a vortex again, and he saw the vast expanse of space once more. His world began reversing swiftly to allow him to return to the past again, and he returned... to the scene he saw previously—the black-robed young man absorbing the butterfly on the Feng Shui compass.

He saw the black-robed young man raise his head again and let out a cold harrumph towards him.

The moment the young man did so, Su Ming's will froze, as if the world had collapsed, as if the person before him was an emperor, and Su Ming himself was an ant which could be wiped off in the next breath... but Su Ming gritted his teeth, and all his will gathered with the power of Morning Dao, Immortal Sect, Sky Hill, and the Emperor of Abyss' True World, allowing him to turn it into an incredibly powerful wave of madness that would make him into a sword that could slice through the laws governing his destiny.

That sword charged towards the person who had let out the cold harrumph, sending a strike... that seeped through an endless number of years from an unknown amount of time in the future, all so that it could have that madness explode in the man's face.

Su Ming had to deliver that strike. He had to cut through the indignation in his heart, the unclear state of his thoughts, and the restless state of his mind!

Loud booms instantly filled the universe. Su Ming could not see the results, because at the moment his will touched the young man, he shattered to pieces!

'If I cannot break it, then I can choose not to touch it, but when the day comes when I will have to come into contact with it, I will go against... I will go against all lives who seized my kismet!'

This was the roar that came from Su Ming's soul before his will crumbled.

It seemed to still be echoing around him when Su Ming's eyes opened and found himself still in the galaxy belonging to Dark Dawn's camp. Everything was still the same as before. Fatigue appeared in Su Ming's eyes... but a graveness only he understood had entered them as well!

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1311: Spirit! - Read

Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1311: Spirit! Bin

Chapter 1311: Spirit!

When Su Ming had borrowed the aura from the stone pieces in the jade boxes to return to the vast space an unknown number of aeons ago and did not run from facing the black-robed young man but instead turned his will into a sword and charged forward...

... Lord Saint Defier Xuan Jia sitting in the hall belonging to the three Lord Saint Defiers closed his eyes. His body trembled nonstop. The beast bones in front of him instantly crumbled. His predictions had received interference from a huge force, causing him to look as if he wanted to open his eyes. Pain appeared on his face.

It was as if the power to allow him to open his eyes had come from space itself. It was as if there was a power there that somehow prevented Xuan Jiu from being able to predict anything about Su Ming.

However, he was Lord Saint Defier who had the longest lifespan in both Saint Defier and Dark Dawn's camps. He had the greatest amount of accumulated experiences, and his thoughts covered so many aspects that an ordinary cultivator in Avacaniya Realm could not hope to compare to him!

The moment these beast bones shattered and were reduced to ash and his eyes were forced open, Xuan Jiu pushed himself to close his eyes. At the same time, he lifted his right hand and seized space with his fingers before he said one single word, "Duo [1]!"

When he said that word, his right hand shuddered. The other two Lord Saint Defiers saw Xuan Jiu's right hand instantly melt into a puddle of blood. The bones in his arm were revealed, but he did not stop moving. It was as if he could not feel pain. He stretched his arm into space, and the instant he touched it, all 180 Expanse Cosmoes in Saint Defier's camp shuddered with a bang.

At the same time, the old man's fingers seemed to have caught onto something concrete. He yanked it out, and the bones of his index finger were crushed. Another finger was soon crushed, and it was soon followed by a third. When three of his fingers were gone, a ball of fog was yanked out of space.

That fog was a cyclone. It rotated nonstop before Xuan Jiu and exuded... waves of ancient presence. It seemed to have come from the past. If anyone came into contact with it, they would feel as if their entire bodies were about to rot.

Cold sweat dripped down from Xuan Jiu's forehead. The other two Lord Saint Defiers watched everything with fixed stares. This was not the first time they had seen Xuan Jiu making predictions... but it was the first time they saw him in such a wretched and horrifying state while casting his Art.

After a moment, Xuan Jiu's eyes flew open. They were bloodshot, and the blood capillaries even reached his pupils, as if they had formed a blood-red Rune. He coughed up blood, and in an instant, he became older.

The cyclone in front of him started showing signs of dissipating.

Xuan Jiu looked as if he had become much older. When he coughed up blood, he did not stop once he started. He coughed up nine consecutive mouthfuls of blood, and with each time, his aura became weaker. When he coughed up the ninth mouthful of blood, he took a few steps back, and he looked so old that he resembled a corpse that had rotted for years in a coffin.

He might have aged and coughed up nine mouthfuls of blood, but Xuan Jiu began laughing loudly. It was hoarse, but there was even surprised delight in his voice. He might have been weakened, but his laughter seemed to be telling the other two Lords that he... had predicted what he wanted to see!

"The broken army [2] will descend!

"Harmonious Morus Alba's disaster!

"Su Ming's disaster!

"He will definitely die in that disaster, and he can't run away from it. This disaster... has already appeared. His will shall be destroyed in the past, and without the past, there is no future. He... is already dead... Hmm?"

Before the old Xuan Jiu could finish speaking, his expression changed, but before he could do anything else, his body shuddered. The dissipating cyclone before him suddenly looked like a withered tree suddenly blooming once more. It... stopped dissipating, and it looked like it was rapidly returning to space.

"That's impossible. This is..." Madness appeared in Xuan Jiu's eyes. At the instant he was about to grab the cyclone again...

In Dark Dawn's camp, Su Ming's eyes flew open.

“Spirit!”

Su Ming was in the 137th Expanse Cosmos in Dark Dawn’s camp, and the Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei was staring at Su Ming. The man from Bear Chart Tribe and all his people were pale-faced. During that instant just then, they could clearly sense a thick wave of aura of death coming from Su Ming’s body.

That aura was so strong that it felt like it could drown the entire Expanse Cosmos... but at the instant it was about to fill the Expanse Cosmos to the brim, it disappeared without a trace. It was at that moment that Su Ming opened his eyes and said that one word.

His will returned to his body, and it was as if everything before had just been an illusion. They were a series of events that had never occurred in the real past, but from them, Su Ming felt as if he had been baptized and become different in a manner that no one else could see, but he himself could sense clearly!

When he opened his eyes, he had said that one word: Spirit. Su Ming did not know why he said it, but somehow, with this aura as a lead, he had been able to travel to the ancient past, moving between the illusory past and reality. Due to his will being destroyed in the past, he had let out that indistinct word that would last for an eternity until his will gathered together again.

That one word was spirit!

It was a single word, but it felt as if there was a supreme form of profundity contained in it.

At the instant Su Ming opened his eyes, light shone in them as if the indignation he felt in his heart previously had went away. His thoughts, which had not been clear became such, and his restless mind immediately returned to its previous state!

And all of this was related to that one word that seemed to be one of a kind in the Vast Expanse since time began an eternity ago. Su Ming did not know what that connection was, but he could vaguely sense that when he came to understand it in the future, his cultivation base and his level of cultivation would rise again... reaching a Realm that would perhaps allow him to become the same as the black-robed young man!

It was a goal that had never appeared in Su Ming’s heart before, but right then, it formed. The young man was a danger. Perhaps he was Su Ming’s disaster, but Su Ming was no longer feeling indignant or had an unclear, restless mind, because he had found his direction. When he unintentionally said that word Spirit, he felt as if he had been reborn. A powerful belief was born in his soul.

If Su Ming had not had the determination to face the black-robed young man earlier, Su Ming would have been unable to do this. Only by facing it, only by not being fearful, and only when his heart, thoughts, and mind were all calm could he make that one word last

for an eternity. And only by doing all of it... could he truly go through a metamorphosis and gain his new belief.

"If I can face you once, then I can face you a second too... It doesn't matter whether it's Arid Triad or Harmonious Morus Alba..."

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. As he mumbled under his breath, he lowered his head and looked around him. All cultivators who met his gaze felt their hearts shudder, and they lowered their heads.

He lifted his right hand and swung his arm, putting away the final jade box floating before him. When it landed in his storage bag, he spoke to Yan Pei.

"I want you to obtain the results for the matter I asked you at the fastest speed you can muster... Other than that, I want you to give me a full map of Dark Dawn's camp."

When Yan Pei hears his words, he immediately lowered his head and voiced his obedience. He was in an incredible state of shock. Besides Su Ming, Yan Pei's level of cultivation was the highest in this place, which was why he could see things that other people could not see.

During that instant just then, he had a strong feeling that Su Ming seemed to have died. He was shrouded by the aura of death, which came from the past. It had oppressed everyone so much that they could not breathe.

But when Su Ming uttered that one word, everything seemed to have instantly moved in reverse. It was as if a withered tree had bloomed again, and as if something rotten had transformed into something amazing. This scene repeated itself in Yan Pei's mind. While a storm raged in his head, the level of mystery surrounding Su Ming in his eyes became greater.

Yan Pei brought out a jade slip. Once he handed it to Su Ming respectfully, he took a few steps back and waited for other orders.

Su Ming took the jade slip. When he cast a glance at it, he turned his head back and stared at Yan Pei. He lifted his right hand and pointed at him. A vortex suddenly appeared at the center of Yan Pei's brow, and a hint of his soul instantly flew out. Once it fused with the jade slip, Su Ming put it away.

"Your soul has fused with the jade slip. Once you have the results, call out my name in your heart, and I will be able to read your mind."

Su Ming turned around and took a step into space, instantly disappearing from the 137th Expanse Cosmos belonging to Bear Chart Tribe.

The bald crane followed him after him. Before it left, it turned its head back to cast a smug look at Yan Pei. However, that smugness was only surface level. When Su Ming had filled with the aura of death, it had sensed a fear and a chill it had never sensed before.

It was at that moment that Lord Saint Defier Xuan Jiu of Saint Defier's camp had tried to grab the cyclone again. He had indeed managed to seize it, but the moment he touched it, his right hand broke down. His body fell backwards, and he coughed up blood again. This time, his blood had black spots in it, as if he had suffered some sort of backlash. As he staggered back, the cyclone fused into the vortex and disappeared without a trace.

"That vortex is his life. I used my life in exchange for his so that I could lure it out... But I can do it only once in my life. I... had clearly seen his death and seen his will crumble. He died under the power of the broken army..."

"But he... had clearly died in the past. Why is he still alive now? Why? How could this be?" Xuan Jiu mumbled as coughed up blood again.

He then closed his eyes. While he did not die, his constitution was severely damaged, and he fell unconscious.

A wave of cold air instantly rose in Xiao Song and Fei Hua's hearts, who were beside him. The two of them looked at each other and fell silent.

It was also at that moment that Cang San Nu, the strongest Sovereign of Dawn opened his eyes in the spot where he meditated. Fighting spirit and killing intent appeared in his eyes. At the instant Su Ming left the 137th Expanse Cosmos, he sensed Su Ming's existence.

"I will fight you, and after that fight, I will be known as Si Nu!"

Chapter 1312: What a Load of Nonsense

Su Ming walked through the galaxy in a long arc. Wherever he went, the space behind him would shine with a brilliant light. There were circles of light produced when his body scraped against the galaxy. Because of that, wherever Su Ming went, the sky and earth would shake.

He did not intentionally conceal his presence, but neither did he specifically have his will spread out. He walked calmly in space with an indifferent look on his face, heading

straight to the Spiritling's Expanse Cosmos based on the map of Dark Dawn, which was now an image in his head.

He wanted to go to the Spiritlings. That place was his mother's homeland. There weren't many reasons to visit it, but he wanted to take a look. He was not returning to his roots, because Su Ming's roots were not in that place, and neither were they in the Fifth True World.

His roots were once in the land of Berserkers, and at another moment in time, in the ninth summit, but right then, Su Ming's roots... were in his heart. It would be everywhere he went. There was no constant place for it, but that did not mean he drifted about either. It was, in fact, a Domain.

The Expanse Cosmos where the Spiritlings were located was incredibly far away for an ordinary cultivator. It would require a journey of hundreds or more than one thousand years to reach that place after moving through Expanse Cosmos after Expanse Cosmos. Even if they used Relocation Runes, the number of crystals that would require would reach astronomical figures.

There were few in Dark Dawn's camp who were worthy of moving through Expanse Cosmoses, but, in truth, there was no need for people to move through many Expanse Cosmoses. Most cultivators would only have to move through two or three in their entire life while practicing cultivation.

But once a cultivator reached Avacaniya Realm, everything would be different. While they still could not cross immeasurable distances with one thought, it was incredibly easy for them to move through Expanse Cosmoses, and if that was the case for those in Avacaniya Realm, then it would be even more so for Su Ming. Practically every time he took a step forward, he would cross half of an Expanse Cosmos. Usually, it took him only two steps to move through an Expanse Cosmos.

He continued walking until a barrier of another Expanse Cosmos appeared before him. Based on the description of the map in his mind... it was where the Spiritlings lived.

Su Ming stood beyond the barrier. He did not immediately step in. Instead, he closed his eyes, and after quietly sensing the presence of the barrier for a moment, he opened his eyes and took a step forward.

When he came into contact with the barrier, he disappeared into it. The bald crane, who had followed him throughout the journey, stepped into the Spiritlings' Expanse Cosmos as well.

Ripples spread out in a distant galaxy at that moment, and Cang San Nu's figure appeared. Killing intent was in his eyes, and there was an awe-inspiring expression on his face. With a swing of his arm, he turned into a long arc. Instantly, he came into

contact with the barrier of the Expanse Cosmos, and as ripples resembling those of a disturbed lake appeared on the barrier, he disappeared as well.

There was a huge block of ice floating in the galaxy belonging to the Spiritlings. The eyes of the woman Su Ming had seen while in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos flew open at that moment.

At the time Su Ming had went into Yin Death Vortex, she had chosen to leave. She returned to Dark Dawn's camp from Arid Triad's gap, and once she returned to the Spiritlings, she chose to isolate herself to train again. Since she had already given Su Ming the sword and did not have the power to retrieve the power of the Spiritlings from him, she decided to give up. She did not continue pursuing the matter, because aside from it being related to the Sacred Lady of the previous generation... the more important reason was that Su Ming had awakened the Spiritlings' Dragon of Destruction.

When Su Ming stepped into the territory of the Spiritlings, her eyes flew open while in the block of ice. A hint of hesitation appeared in her gaze as she looked into the distance.

With her power, it was impossible for her to not notice Su Ming's arrival, and no matter what, she was the Spiritlings' Sacred Lady. Su Ming's presence contained the will of the Dragon of Destruction, which was the brightest light in the darkness for her, and because of it, she could immediately sense it.

After all, besides her status as a Sacred Lady, this Expanse Cosmos... belonged to the Spiritlings. They had lived there and grown in numbers for countless years. The Expanse Cosmos was filled with the wills of countless Spiritlings.

Su Ming's arrival caused all of them to feel as if they were boiling. They sensed... the presence of the Dragon of Destruction, the supreme Spiritling spoken in their legends.

"Is he... here?" The woman was silent for a moment before she mumbled under her breath and stood up to disappear from the ice.

There was a planet that was not very bright in the Spiritlings' Expanse Cosmos, but it was regarded as an incredibly sacred existence. Its name was Bright Violet.

Bright Violet Planet was the place where all the past tribe leaders, Tribe Elders, and the Sacred Ladies were laid to rest. The ancestors of the Spiritlings over the countless years were also buried there. Once they died, every single generation of the important people in the Spiritlings was buried on that planet.

The sky was blue, and not many stars could be seen in it. The surface of the planet was a boundless ocean, making it clear that this was a planet occupied by ocean. There were quite a lot of islands on it, but no continents.

Buried on each island were the tribe leaders, Tribe Elders, and Sacred Ladies of a generation. Those islands were densely packed together and were as numerous as the stars. They were protected by the Spiritlings every day and every night, which was a tradition which had lasted throughout many ages.

At that moment, Su Ming stood quietly in the sky of the planet and looked at the seawater below him. Waves billowed there. When they tumbled about, they looked like sea dragons swimming about. When the sea was calm, it looked like a mirror. However, it was a mirror that could not reflect any images. It only showed the color of the sky.

If anyone looked in the direction of Su Ming's gaze, they would see that he was looking at one of the many islands on the sea. That island was not big, but filled with a brilliant green due to all the plants growing on it. There were three altars on it, which was similar to the other islands. Each of them had three altars, and they were set up to form a triangle.

The altar at the top belonged to Tribe Elders, the one on the bottom right to tribe leaders, and the one on the bottom left to Sacred Ladies.

Su Ming looked over the altars quietly, his gaze penetrating through the distance to land on the tombstone of the Sacred Lady on the left of the island. The tombstone there... was empty.

All the islands with the tombstones of Sacred Ladies had the names of their Sacred Ladies carved on them. The records of their lives were also carved out. Only that one tombstone... was empty!

The empty state did not mean that the Sacred Lady was still alive, since there was no need to erect a tombstone for the living. She had died and was buried in the passage of time, but there were no words on her tombstone, and this provoked much thought...

After a long while, Su Ming took a step forward and disappeared. When he reappeared, he was already standing on top of the altar, directly south of the tombstone. He stared at the empty tombstone. There was not even a name on it. There was only the faint remnant of a soul gathered there, but even it was fading away.

The remnant of the soul caused Su Ming's heart to tremble when he sensed it. He stared at the stone monument in a daze... having sensed his mother's presence.

'Why are there no words on this tombstone? Is it because she did not want the descendants of her tribe to know of her existence, or is it because... she doesn't want me...'

Su Ming was silent. There was a slightly melancholic look on his face. He could not describe what he felt at that moment. There were mixed feelings in him, sentiment, and also anguish.

“Tell me, why?” Su Ming asked while staring at the tombstone. His words were not directed at the empty tombstone, but the person who had appeared behind him.

It was not Cang San Nu, but a woman. She... was the Spiritlings’ current Sacred Lady, the woman Su Ming had met in Arid Triad... his aunt.

“Before she reached the end of her time, she left behind a will saying that we were not supposed to say anything on her tombstone, because she felt... that she had wronged the Spiritlings... She did not want her descendants to know her name. She...”

The woman who appeared behind Su Ming hesitated for a moment. When her voice echoed in the air, Su Ming brought his hand up swiftly and pushed his hand on the stone monument.

His act of pushing his palm against the stone monument stunned the woman. Her first thought was that Su Ming wanted to crush the tombstone. Her expression changed. But just when she was about to move forward, Su Ming lifted his hand from the stone monument. Some stone powder appeared on his hand, and on it were traces of the remnant of the soul. Su Ming held it in his hand, then pushed it at the center of his brow. The marks of time immediately appeared on him.

It was there only for a moment before disappearing without a trace. Su Ming turned around and took a step forward, immediately disappearing from the woman’s gaze. She did not know where he was going, but her expression kept on changing nonstop...

“She...”

She did not manage to finish her sentence. She only uttered that one word before she stopped speaking. In silence, her gaze turned complicated, and she cast a glance at the altar of the previous Tribe Elder, which was situated at the top of the triangle. With a sigh in her mind, she turned around to leave.

But right when she was about to leave, Su Ming’s figure appeared out of nowhere. It was as if he had never disappeared before. The only thing that had gone away was the woman’s vision of him.

Su Ming had tried to sense the past by fusing himself with time when he cast the Art of Time. Because of that, he would give other people a misconception that he was gone, but in truth, he was always there.

At the moment his figure appeared, Su Ming’s expression grew dark. There was an anger that was rarely seen in his eyes. It was not a small spark of annoyance, but rage that could burn the heavens!

When a weak person became angry, no one would be afraid of them, but when a powerful person became angry, they would affect the universe. When a cultivator was

angry, they would cause blood to spill in all directions, but when Almighties grew angry... they could reduce the universe to a wasteland!

Everyone could see the ferocious look on Su Ming's face. The fire in his eyes felt like it could burn all lives, like a volcano that was about to erupt and bring about the end of the world.

"What a load of nonsense!" Su Ming's voice was gloomy and dark when he turned around to face the woman.

Her expression changed. At that moment, she felt as if Su Ming had turned into a murderous fiend from ancient times. With just one sentence and one glance, he caused her heart to roar, and she felt as if she was about to break down. She instinctively took a few steps back.

But when she started moving back, Su Ming closed in on her. He raised his right hand and seized her throat.

"I won't kill you..."

The moment Su Ming said those words in a cold tone, he squeezed her throat with his right hand. Her face became pale, but her expression did not change.

However, numerous cracks appeared on the huge block of ice she used all year long as her isolation grounds in a spot far away from the island. With a bang, it crumbled to pieces.

"I destroyed your Life Nourishment Crystal as punishment for your silence in the past!"

The woman looked as if she still wanted to say something, but when she heard Su Ming's words, her face turned stark pale. She did not say anything anymore. When Su Ming released his grip, she took a few steps back and coughed up a mouthful of blood. In silence, she cast a glance at the empty tombstone, and tears fell from her eyes.

"Big sister, I'm sorry..."

"Next is you. You... who seized your people's kismet for longevity, today... your longevity comes to an end!"

Su Ming turned around and lifted his head to cast his gaze on the tombstone of the Tribe Elder of the same generation.

Chapter 1313: Whose World is This?!

To Abyss Builders... the past was just a jade slip with history recorded in it, and it coincidentally had time fused into it. Perhaps other people would not be able to find or see the jade slip, which was why it would be difficult for them to know about it.

But among the Abyss Builders, who possessed the Art of Time, some of the powerful warriors could see the ancient past.

Su Ming could be said to be the strongest among the Abyss Builders. Without a lead, he could reverse the time to ten thousand years ago, while with a lead, he would have a specific timeline to go to. He could move further down the passage of time and see everything that he wanted to see.

Such as the young man in black robes and... his mother.

She was a woman with a gentle personality. She had waited quietly for Su Ming's father to return, but before he did, Su Zhan died in battle, and Su Ming vanished with him. Such an event had a great impact on her, and she... stopped smiling.

When she reached the end of her life and she was buried beneath the altar, Su Ming saw in the memories of time that the words on the stone monument had been wiped off by an aged hand!

The Spiritlings were a curious tribe. Their strength did not lie in the living, but in the ancestors who had died. Their ancestors might have passed away, but in truth, due to the uniqueness of the Spiritlings, it would be better to say that they were asleep.

As they slept, they could absorb the beliefs of their people who worshiped them to maintain the strength of their souls so that they could gather together to gain corporeal form, and then, they would wake up...

They believed that they would surely wake up. This was what was unique about the Spiritlings. It was just like Su Ming's version of Fate Realm among the four Realms. He needed external fate to form his own laws of fate, and the ancestors of the Spiritlings needed a similar form of power to maintain a certain degree of being imperishable.

The worship required the ancestor's names to be known, which was why the ancestors of the Spiritlings who died all had their names carved onto their tombstones.

The hand that appeared on the tombstone belonging to Su Ming's mother had wiped off her name, which made it impossible for the descendants of the race to worship her, making the soul of Su Ming's mother to dissipate!

When the words on the tombstone were wiped off, the current Sacred Lady—Su Ming's aunt—had witnessed everything with her own eyes. While shivering, she tried to stop

the man... but once the owner of the hand cast her a glance, her mind went numb, and she forgot to stop him, allowing him to wipe off all traces of the words on the tombstone.

This was the past. It existed in the passage of time, allowing Su Ming to see it clearly.

He also saw that the hand who wiped off the name on the tombstone belonged to a middle-aged man. He had no aura of flesh and blood, which meant he was a pure soul. Once he wiped off the words on the tombstone, he returned... to his own tomb. The place where he disappeared was the spot where Su Ming had directed his gaze at that moment.

It was... the grave that belonged to the previous Tribe Elder!

At the instant Su Ming looked over, the tombstone let out a piercing rumble. As it did so, a huge crack appeared on the stone monument, as if it could not withstand the rage in Su Ming's gaze. It was as if everything that Su Ming saw had to be destroyed.

Even the dead would have to die again! Because the person who wanted to kill them was Su Ming!

With a loud bang, the stone monument shattered into pieces. Su Ming took a step forward and raised his right hand to press down on the altar.

With that one push, the world roared. It looked like an invisible hand landed on the altar, and it started shattering, layer by layer, starting from the platform. In an instant, it was reduced to ashes. A huge mark of a hand appeared on the ground!

Beneath it... was a shattered coffin!

It was red in color, just like blood. At the instant it shattered, a hand shot out from its depths. That hand was withered and bony. Its fingernails were black and three feet long. When that arm appeared, a thick aura of death shot up into the sky.

The hand pushed forward, and the coffin fell apart to reveal a thin middle-aged man dressed in a Daoist robe. His hair was graying, and his eyes were long and narrow, but a red light shone in his pupils.

A heinous murderous aura revealed itself, and it immediately caused a disturbance in Spiritling Expanse Cosmos. Endless fluctuations of power appeared in it.

"You..."

The man had a strangely monstrous yet awe-inspiring air that could shock and intimidate all manner of lives. His words were slow, and his presence made him look like a supreme entity. He seemed to have gathered together the most supreme form of

power in the world. Even the ghastly air about him seemed to have descended from all of Spiritling Expanse Cosmos.

But he only managed to say one word. Before he could utter a second one, Su Ming appeared before him. He lifted his right hand, and before the middle-aged man could react to the situation, Su Ming seized his neck and squeezed it tightly. A cracking sound shot up into the air, and he threw him violently to the ground.

Su Ming used his full strength in his grip, so the middle-aged man's neck was completely crushed and his head shattered when it hit the ground. The throw had shaken the whole island. If Su Ming had not wanted the cultivation planet to be destroyed, his throw could have made the cultivation planet crumble.

The middle-aged man's soul was shaken by Su Ming's sudden action. He let out a shrill scream of pain, and his body disappeared with a bang. He turned into fog, then instantly gathered together in the distance. When he looked at Su Ming, shock was in his eyes. The bizarre and monstrous air about him when he just appeared was gone. Instead, his eyes were wide-open with disbelief.

"Who are you?!"

The middle-aged man was the previous Tribe Leader, and he had met the Sovereign of Dawn plenty of times in the past. His level of cultivation was also just below Avanicaya Realm. If it was not because of the uniqueness of the Spiritlings and him being forced to die, there was a high possibility that he would have reached Avacaniya Realm by then. However, since he was forced to die, he had become a soul that no longer had a body.

With the years of nourishment, his soul had become stronger, and he had begun to gather together a shell that possessed some flesh and blood. However, when Su Ming seized him and threw him just then, all the power of worship he had absorbed was immediately crushed to bits. Su Ming's level of strength made his skin crawl, since it was something he had never encountered in his life.

The anger on Su Ming's face also made the middle-aged man feel a chill in his heart.

Su Ming did not even bother answering him. Instead, he moved forward, and in an instant, he appeared before the middle-aged man. He lifted his right hand and grabbed him. The Tribe Elder might have died once, but that intense feeling that his life was being threatened instantly rose in his soul again, but he did not dodge. Instead, madness appeared in his eyes.

If Su Ming's killing intent was not strong, he would definitely find another way to solve this predicament, but he knew that Su Ming was intent on killing him. It was something he would be unable to resolve or neutralize no matter what!

It was because of this that the middle-aged man instantly descended into madness. He did not dare to relax his guard even in the slightest bit since the pressure Su Ming gave him was just too great!

“This is the Spiritlings’ Expanse Cosmos. Ancestors, please protect me!” the middle-aged man immediately roared. At the instant Su Ming came to seize him, the middle-aged man swiftly formed a seal with his arms before him.

The tombstones on all the altars on the islands in the planet shuddered. Countless sleeping souls flew up with their eyes shut. In an instant, they surrounded the middle-aged man’s body.

Those were the ancestors who had fallen asleep over the countless years. Some of them had already woken up, and some of them were still sleeping, but no matter what, the moment the middle-aged man called out to them, they flew out and fused to fight against the great disaster of their race!

They had rushed over not because the middle-aged man had great power, but because this was an inborn ability belonging to all Tribe Elders. They could summon the spirits of their ancestors!

The Tribe Elder of each generation could do this!

When all the souls of the ancestors of the Spiritlings surrounded the middle-aged man and formed a vortex to handle Su Ming’s hand, the world became dark. Countless ripples appeared in the Spiritlings’ Expanse Cosmos. It filled with the Spiritlings’ presence, and it seemed like the place completely transformed into the Spiritlings’ world. In fact... there was even a will in this Expanse Cosmos, and it was the Spiritlings’ will!

“No matter how strong you are, when you are among us Spiritlings, then if you suddenly harbor killing intent against me for no reason, you must die, you mad man!”

While the middle-aged man roared out his words, Su Ming’s hand touched the vortex. As loud bangs rang out in the air, most of the vortex disintegrated and swept up the middle-aged man a hundred thousand feet away. A small portion of his soul immediately dissipated, causing his face to turn pale. The shock on his face became greater, but an air of arrogance also filled him.

“This Expanse Cosmos belongs to us Spiritlings. This is our sacred land. All the souls in this place and all the presences here, be it the past, present, or future, belong to the Spiritlings, and this is how this Expanse Cosmos’ will is formed. Can a mere person like you withstand the will of an Expanse Cosmos?!”

The middle-aged man had a ferocious expression on his face as he glared at Su Ming. There was an intense madness in his voice. In his mind, since Su Ming wanted to kill

him, he would completely destroy him, because he believed that Su Ming's strike could do nothing to him!

Su Ming cast the middle-aged man a cold glance, and when he opened his mouth, his words were like a cold breeze that traveled into every direction.

"Alright. I have never intended for you to compensate for your mistakes alone. If that is the case... then I will use all of the souls of your deceased to write down my mother's name on her tombstone again!

"Did you say that this Expanse Cosmos belongs to your people?"

At the instant Su Ming spoke, he lifted his right hand and seized the space in the direction of the sky. With a swift yank, the master of the galaxy changed once more!

The will of Spiritling Expanse Cosmos was just like a firefly's light when compared to Su Ming's will, which was like a bright sun. When Su Ming grabbed it, it crumbled. With a yank, the entire Expanse Cosmos was instantly filled... with Su Ming's will!

The middle-aged man was stunned. He was completely dumbstruck as he stared at the sky with a blank expression.

Chapter 1314: Life Extermination Hall

The Expanse Cosmoes in Dark Dawn's camp could not have any wills born within them. However, over the course of countless years, since every Expanse Cosmos only had one single race residing in it and there were no mixed races who could be in conflict with each other, singular and weak wills had gradually been born over the years. They could not be counted as real wills, however. They were formed by countless beliefs grouped together. If they had enough time, and if the tribes in these Expanse Cosmoes could become stronger, they could even invade and occupy the other Expanse Cosmoes.

One day, a real will could eventually be born like that.

However, at that moment, even if the Spiritlings had managed to accomplish this with much difficulty and their unique inborn abilities, the will born in the Expanse Cosmos was still not complete. It could be said that it did not belong to Arid Triad, because this sort of weak will was something Arid Triad would not pay attention to in the slightest.

Su Ming also did not pay much attention to them either. With a swing of his arm, he could chase away all such wills. Compared to him, they were so weak that they could not even take a single blow from him.

However... when Su Ming swung his arm and the owner of the galaxy was replaced with his will, he could sense clearly that the will he had chased away... was shattering to bits before they came forth to fuse with him. This scene caused Su Ming's eyes to constrict in a barely noticeable fashion.

He could no longer Possess the other True Worlds. It was the warning Arid Triad had given to him. If Su Ming violated this rule within the one hundred years, Arid Triad would descend, and the disaster would be brought ahead of schedule.

This was not what Su Ming wanted to see, which was why he did not continue to stir up Arid Triad's wariness against him, but right then, the changes in this place caused Su Ming's pupils to shrink. At the same time, he thought of a method to get out of the situation.

The instant the Expanse Cosmos' will was changed in a manner as if Su Ming had just deceived heaven itself, the middle-aged man was rendered flabbergasted. When he sucked in a sharp breath, he instinctively moved backwards with disbelief and shock on his face.

"You... You..."

Before he could finish speaking, Su Ming had already turned his head around to look at him coldly. He moved and instantly closed in on the middle-aged man, who shuddered. He quickly moved back, spread his arms, formed a seal, then pushed one hand towards the sky, and the other downwards before he roared.

"Ancestors of Spiritlings, gather your souls on my body!"

Once he spoke, the planet trembled with a bang. The souls of the Spiritlings' ancestors on the countless islands gathered on him and fused into his body, causing his level of cultivation to continuously increase. In an instant, he surpassed Avacaniya Realm, but his cultivation base was still increasing at an explosive rate. However, Su Ming was unperturbed by it.

He simply allowed the middle-aged man's cultivation base to become increasingly stronger and his expression to become more ferocious with each passing moment. When Su Ming closed in on the man, he brought his right hand up and swung his arm. Booming sounds echoed in the air, and the middle-aged man swiftly moved back. He coughed up a mouthful of spirit aura and threw his head back to roar madly at the sky.

Many souls instantly gathered around him. They were the ancestors of the Spiritlings. At that moment, they looked like black clouds from a distance. They swept out in all

directions and charged towards Su Ming. The black clouds looked as if they had turned into a huge mouth, and it was about to devour Su Ming in one bite.

But the moment they came into contact with him, Su Ming let out a cold harrumph. He seized the air with his right hand, and it immediately turned into a huge hand to catch the black cloud that came to devour him. Booming sounds echoed through all of the Spiritling Expanse Cosmos, and the black cloud that was formed by countless Spiritling ancestors gathered together let out a shrill roar. When it shuddered, it looked as if it tried to break free from Su Ming's hand, but it could not do so.

Once Su Ming seized it, the black cloud's roars shook the sky and earth. Countless shadows appeared that fought against each other to flee from the black cloud, but they could not do so. They could only be held by Su Ming and go down with him until he stood before the empty tombstone...

Su Ming grabbed the huge black cloud with his right hand, then lifted his index finger. By using the black cloud as ink, he started carving words on the empty tombstone.

"Mother... Chen Su's grave..."

Every single time he wrote a word, shrill roars that were constantly increasing in intensity came from the black cloud. Each word contained a number of the souls of the Spiritlings' ancestors. They continued dissipating as they roared because Su Ming was using them in words to worship his mother.

The black cloud continued shrinking nonstop, and a wave of despair enveloped the souls in it. It was especially so for the middle-aged man. His voice was the shrillest. The pain the souls suffered was indescribable. They felt like the entire world was inflicting pain on them.

Those who had died once would have two different reactions. One of them would be indifference to death, but most people would become even more fearful of death, and the ancestors of the Spiritlings were the latter type. As they screamed shrilly in pain, Su Ming began carving words on the tombstone again.

"Your son... Su Ming will use the souls of the Spiritlings to honor you."

When Su Ming finished writing, the black cloud in his right hand dissipated.

The last to dissipate was the middle-aged man. Once his soul was crushed, Su Ming wrote the final word. The pain of despair caused the middle-aged man to feel as if he was about to go mad. At the moment before he dissipated, he felt as if he had returned to the past. When he saw the Sacred Lady of their people giving birth to that bastard fathered by a foreigner, the jealousy and madness in his heart had caused him to wipe off her existence once she passed away.

This was the final scene in his memories, and after that... everything was empty.

The carving of the words used up all the souls of the Spiritlings' ancestors. Su Ming could not accept just punishing one Tribe Elder. If the Sacred Lady of the current generation had not stopped the event and was punished for it, then the Spiritlings' ancestors who had watched the words on the tombstone belonging to Su Ming's mother being wiped off and her soul dissipating would not receive forgiveness either.

Since they did not stop him... they were in the wrong!

When Su Ming unfurled his right hand, everything was silent around him. He stared at the tombstone quietly, then knelt down and stayed like that for three days.

Then, Su Ming stood up. He cast a glance at the tombstone again before he turned around and walked into the air.

The galaxy was filled with his will, and countless wisps of the Expanse Cosmos' will fused into him nonstop. As they gathered on Su Ming's will, it was nourished, and he became slightly stronger than before.

He walked through the Spiritlings' galaxy, and the bald crane followed behind him. It did not speak, because it had seen Su Ming's actions on the planet. It saw Su Ming kneeling for a prolonged period of time in front of the tombstone. After that it, it stayed beside Su Ming and just walked forward quietly. It did not know where Su Ming wanted to go, but since Su Ming did not want to speak, then it would also keep quiet.

They continued walking until an incredibly ordinary looking planet appeared before them. It did not have much spiritual energy, and it was incredibly desolate. There weren't even many cultivators there.

Su Ming stared at the planet in silence for a moment before he walked over. He landed on an unbroken mountain range to the northeast of the planet and looked down on a village at the foot of the mountain. It was... his mother's homeland, which he had seen when he saw the soul fragment's past.

He watched it silently, and after a long while he said faintly, "Either you go away, or you go away."

Su Ming's murderous aura had not dissipated, and it was impossible for it dissipate just because he had wiped off all the Ancestors' souls to worship his mother. Even though he had never met his mother before... she was still his mother!

Her soul had dissipated by then, and the reason for it was because of the previous Tribe Elder. Su Ming was already being merciful by not destroying all the Spiritlings.

The murderous aura in his heart did not dissipate. At that moment, if someone who could not read the mood came to provoke him, that person... would have to face Su Ming whose killing intent had reached a murderous degree!

And precisely at that moment... a person who could not read the mood appeared.

“You’re far too conceited!” A cold and sinister voice echoed in the air. Cang San Nu swiftly appeared on another mountain not too far from Su Ming. When he looked at Su Ming, an intense fighting spirit appeared in his eyes.

“I am a Sovereign of Dawn in Avacaniya Realm, Cang...”

Cang San Nu had just started speaking and had yet to say his name while swinging his arm when Su Ming turned his head around. A hint of ferociousness as well as killing intent appeared on his face.

“Get lost!”

When he said that one word, the world rumbled. The planet trembled slightly, and the entire Expanse Cosmos began shuddering. His voice was like roaring thunder, and the instant it reverberated through the Expanse Cosmos, the air in front of Su Ming distorted. Cang San Nu’s expression changed drastically. The mountain range beneath him... crumbled in an instant. It did not shatter to pieces, but was instantly reduced to ash.

Cang San Nu coughed up seven consecutive mouthfuls of blood, and he was forced back about seventy thousand feet. When he finally managed to stop, he lifted his head swiftly, and shock appeared on his face.

When Su Ming’s voice echoed through Spiritling Expanse Cosmos, Cang San Nu’s heart shuddered. During that moment, three black-robed men appeared in Spiritling Expanse Cosmos with bodies surrounded by fog.

The three of them swiftly spread out, and as they traveled forward, Su Ming’s will came into contact with them, but it would phase through them as if they were invisible. It seemed like his will could not detect the three black-robed men, like there was some strange object on the trio’s bodies that would allow them to avoid his will.

The three split into three directions. When they moved, they created multiple versions of themselves and entered almost each of the cultivation planets in Spiritling Expanse Cosmos in search of the powerful warriors in this galaxy. Once they did, they would whisper to them.

“Spiritling Expanse Cosmos’ will has been seized by someone else. This person has great bloodlust, is brutal and callous. Now that your Expanse Cosmos’ will has been

snatched away, the Expanse Cosmos' life will definitely end within five hundred years, and a disaster will fall on you.

"In fact, from now on, all of the cultivators in this Expanse Cosmos will no longer be able to advance in your levels of cultivation, because this person... has already taken away everything that belongs to you!

"This person has the personality of a demon, and his power is like that of a tree, when there are plenty of trees, a forest will be formed... We cannot cut it down, and neither can we destroy it. We can only seal it!

"We... come from Life Extermination Hall!"

The three black-robed man searched for all the powerful warriors they could find in Spiritling Expanse Cosmos and said those words to them. The powerful warriors fell silent upon hearing them. They would normally not believe in unknown people's words so easily, but the name of Life Extermination Hall... seemed to have chased away all their doubts and turned them into belief.

Chapter 1315: Cang San Nu's Confidence

There was one of the black-robed men in the cultivation planet where Su Ming stood. Once he said his things and walked out of a cave abode, he lifted his head and cast a glance at the sky. With it, a drop of crimson blood appeared at the center of his brow.

It looked like it had been branded into his forehead. When it shone with a red light, it allowed him to see far into the distance, and he saw Su Ming standing at the top of the mountain.

He also saw the shocked Cang San Nu.

"He's just a mere cultivator in Avacaniya Realm. How dare he provoke a person like this? Hmph, this person is highly valued by the Progenitor, and he has been preparing for that person for years, there is no way a mere cultivator in Avacaniya Realm can affect him.

"If it weren't because the Progenitor has given us his origin blood, we would not dare to show even a single strand of hair before this person, but now... Even if this person has already surpassed Arid Triad, he will still be unable to find us," the black-robed man said faintly and swung his arm to turn into a long arc that flew into the sky before he disappeared without a trace.

Cang San Nu stared at Su Ming in shock. His face was slightly pale, but when he gritted his teeth, the unwillingness to admit defeat appeared on his face. Madness burned in his eyes, as if he had something he could depend on that made him absolutely confident that he could kill Su Ming. His will to fight instantly burned again.

“I am Cang San Nu, and I am here to challenge you!”

‘Is this person an idiot?’ The bald crane laid down in a lackadaisical fashion beside Su Ming, then cast a sideways glance at the roaring Cang San Nu.

‘Strange. Why is there such a strange person in Dark Dawn’s camp? Su Ming forced him back seventy thousand feet with a shout, and he still dares to challenge him?’ The bald crane scrutinized Cang San Nu, and it determined that he was an idiot.

‘Dark Dawn’s camp is quite interesting. Among the three Sovereigns of Dawn, one is Yan Pei, and another one is an idiot. I wonder what the third one is like...’

A smug look appeared on the bald crane’s face. It felt that if they were to compare their intelligences, the bald crane would definitely have the upper hand.

“I have killed three people from the previous aeon who had woken up, so you will be the fourth I will kill. Then, I will change my name to Cang Si Nu!”

As Cang San Nu roared, he raised his hands and swung them. The area around him was immediately dyed crimson. A strong bloody stench instantly filled the area. Once it did, the old man lifted his right hand and pushed downwards.

“Blood Spirit!”

Roars immediately echoed in the blood-red world. Five figures gathered up in the bloody air. They looked contorted and were covered in fresh blood. At the moment they appeared, they looked at Su Ming, then turned into five long arcs that charged towards him.

As they approached him, Su Ming scowled. His murderous aura erupted from him at that moment. He brought his right hand up, then seized the air in front of him. With it, the incoming five Blood Spirits shuddered before they broke down into countless droplets of blood that charged towards Su Ming’s right hand. They merged together to form a blood pearl above his palm.

With a fierce squeeze, the blood pearl shattered, and ripples even stirred up in the air around him, causing distortions to appear. Then, the blood-red world shattered in the manner akin to how a mirror would break.

Cang San Nu's expression changed again. When he staggered backwards, he coughed up blood, but he still did not give up. Great confidence showed on his face. It stayed with him, causing him to believe that no matter what, he would definitely win the fight!

He bit the tip of his tongue and coughed up blood. It immediately turned into a blood dragon, and once it roared at the sky, it sucked in a sharp breath. The crumbling blood-red world was immediately sucked into its mouth, and its body swelled up to ten thousand feet before it charged towards Su Ming.

"Since you want to die, I will fulfill your request."

Su Ming's expression was dark. When he spoke, he took a step forward. He did not try to evade the blood dragon charging at him, but simply allowed it to open its mouth and devour him.

The moment they came into contact with each other, Su Ming did not even bother to attack. However, the blood dragon let out a shrill scream of pain. Devouring Su Ming was like devouring an entire galaxy, and it was beyond what it could manage.

Even colliding against him made it feel as if it had crashed into a wall that could not be shaken. The rebound that came back at it caused the blood dragon to roar in pain, and its body instantly crumbled.

Su Ming did not stop. With one step, he instantly appeared beside Cang San Nu. He lifted his right hand and swung his arm, and Su Ming's will descended with a bang.

"Slave 1!"

Cang San Nu's expression changed. When he swiftly retreated, he opened his mouth and spat out a pearl. It let out a bang and crumbled to turn into green fog. When it collided with Su Ming's will, booming sounds filled the air, and a withered hand stretched out from the green fog.

A presence that did not belong to their aeon spread out from the arm. It moved so fast that the instant Su Ming's will came into contact with it, it tried to grab his right hand. Su Ming let out a cold harrumph and simply allowed the right hand to seize his arm, then he flipped his hand and pushed forward.

With that push, the world roared, wind blew, and the green fog vanished to reveal a mummy that was once a child of about eight or nine years old. Red light was in the mummy's eyes. It did not possess any intelligence, and once it grabbed Su Ming's right hand, it pounced on him.

Su Ming flung his arm, and a huge force erupted from his body to rush into the mummy's body. With a bang, the mummy crumbled.

“You have indeed surpassed a normal cultivator in Avacaniya Realm, and you are indeed worthy of killing some of the weaker people who woke up... but you should not have provoked me,” Su Ming said flatly. With the mummy alone, Cang San Nu already possessed the right to threaten some of those in Avacaniya Realm.

“I’m very curious. What sort of method did you use to kill those who woke up, and why do you... have such confidence that made you provoke me?”

Su Ming’s eyes flashed. He did not care about the old man’s appearance, but the mummy and its presence made it obvious that they were a sleeping person from the previous aeon. Su Ming had met this sort of person before, but he could not kill him. He could only seal him.

Yet right then, there was clearly the aura of death on the mummy, and its intelligence had clearly been wiped off before it was refined into a weapon.

“You can experience it yourself!”

Madness appeared on Cang San Nu’s face. Once Su Ming destroyed the first mummy, he took a few steps backwards, and when he opened his mouth, he spat out another pearl that immediately turned into black air. Right after that, the third pearl flew out from Cang San Nu’s mouth.

The two pearls practically appeared at the same time. Once they turned into black and white fog respectively, two mummies appeared in them. One of them belonged to a man, and the other to a woman. When they appeared, the presence that did not belong to the current aeon appeared once more.

Once the two mummies appeared, the baffling confidence showed up on Cang San Nu’s face again. Su Ming did not believe that the old man before him was an idiot or a madman who lusted after battles. On the contrary, Su Ming believed that the old man definitely had a skill in hand that allowed him such confidence, and that skill... should be so incredibly powerful that it defied the laws of heaven.

This belief was incredibly strong. While Su Ming did not sense any form of danger from the old man, but that belief was strong in his heart every single time they clashed.

There was no way anyone who reached Avacaniya Realm could be a fool. If the person dared to appear before him and still chose to attack after hearing his roar, it... interested Su Ming.

In the face of the two people who had once woken up but whose consciousness and lives had been wiped off so they became puppets, Su Ming seized air with his right hand. The End of Wills Sword immediately appeared in his hand. With one slash, two rays of dazzling purple light instantly appeared.

Once that purple light sliced through the mummies, the two puppets jolted and were torn apart in front of Su Ming before they were reduced to ash. During that moment, the sword in Su Ming's hand flew out and charged towards the center of Cang San Nu's brow.

He wanted to force the old man to use that skill which gave him such confidence. He wanted to see just what caused this person to be so confident and what had allowed him to kill three powerful warriors from the previous aeon who had fused with their other selves.

The purple light from the End of Wills Sword instantly closed in on its target. Cang San Nu's expression changed. He instantly moved back, and a hint of ferociousness appeared on his face. Since all of his methods were useless against Su Ming and his three slaves—his killing moves—could not even withstand a single blow, he could only... use his final attack.

He believed that once he brought out this item, Su Ming would be just like the other three people who had woken up. He would immediately die due to the shockwave, and he would instantly be able to turn the tides of battle and become the final winner.

He believed in this firmly, because the item's strength was one which had never disappointed him before!

He had not immediately brought the item out but kept it for the final moment because he liked the excitement and striking back when it looked like his opponent had the complete advantage. He could overturn all his enemy's advantages, which meant that his target would be struck by despair at the moment they were feeling the most confident.

He loved watching how their expressions changed. That was why he did not feel any sense of loss when his three slaves were destroyed, because he knew... that he was about to obtain... a puppet who was even stronger than those three slaves!

With confidence and madness on his face, right when the End of Wills Sword closed in on him, Cang San Nu threw his head back and laughed loudly. As he did so, he brought his right hand up and viciously struck the spot between his eyebrows. The clothes covering his chest were torn, and once his chest was revealed, Su Ming saw that... there was a thin membrane the size of a palm on the old man's chest!

It looked to be stuck to his body. When Su Ming saw it, a sense of danger instantly rose within him, and his heart jolted.

It was at that moment that the End of Wills Sword closed in on the old man, and an ancient presence swiftly spread out from the thin membrane. Su Ming's End of Wills Sword shuddered swiftly, and it could no longer move forward.

Everything in the area instantly fell silent. Su Ming stared at the membrane in fixation, and a loud bang shot up in his mind.

‘This presence...’

Chapter 1316: Fragment!

‘Harmonious Morus Alba’s presence!’

Su Ming instantly reached a conclusion. The thin membrane stuck on Cang San Nu’s chest had Harmonious Morus Alba’s presence. It was so thick that it even surpassed the presence he sensed previously on Harmonious Morus Alba’s will!

‘This is...’

When Su Ming’s pupils shrank and Cang San Nu’s ferocious laughter echoed in the air, he brought up his right hand and took off the thin membrane from his chest. He flung it forward, and the thin membrane instantly fused with the air before it reappeared the next instant before the shuddering End of Wills Sword. When it passed through it gently, the End of Wills Sword began shattering and breaking down inch by inch...

The racial vessel of Great Abyss Tribe shattered to pieces at that instant!

It was as if no existence could not stop the thin membrane no matter what they did. Everything that touched it would be instantly destroyed. The air shattered, the galaxy shuddered, and a powerful sense of danger enveloped Su Ming’s heart.

If he had not met the black-robed young man, this would be the strongest presence he had ever felt, but now, while the thin membrane gave Su Ming a feeling that it could kill him, it was unable to shock him.

Su Ming also understood from where Cang San Nu confidence stemmed and why he dared to provoke him. All of the answers to his questions lay in that item!

The thin membrane instantly closed in on him, and a brilliant light appeared in Su Ming’s eyes. He did not retreat. When he lifted his right hand, the wills of Morning Dao, Immortal Sect, Sky Hill, and the Emperor of Abyss’ True World instantly gathered on him.

The full power of his cultivation base erupted from him. His will spread out until it reached two fingers on his raised right hand. He pointed them towards the incoming membrane, but he did not tap it. Instead, he had his fingers clamp down on it!

Su Ming was definitely not thinking about just resisting the item. He wanted... to make it his own!

Derision appeared on Cang San Nu's face. There were a lot of people who had died under his supreme treasure, and among them, there were those who believed that they had great divine abilities and wanted to claim this item as their own. Yet the moment they touched it, either their bodies would be crushed or they would be wiped off till even their souls were gone.

Based on his experiences, with Su Ming's level of cultivation, he should not be reduced to ash. Instead, he would become an empty shell suitable for him to refine into a puppet.

Cang San Nu's ferocious smile became even more brilliant as he watched the thin membrane come into contact with Su Ming's fingers and Su Ming clamping down on it with his fingers.

"Die! DIE!"

Cang San Nu laughed arrogantly and walked towards Su Ming. That was his personality. He would not attack and kill his enemies with this method straight away, but would first toy with them, causing them to believe that they were the ones toying with him. Only at the end would they realize that the one toyed with was never Cang San Nu himself.

In fact, he had already thought of how he wanted to refine Su Ming into a puppet. He took another step forward, but right at the moment his foot landed, his smile froze, and true shock appeared on his face.

He saw Su Ming shuddering... but there were signs of him shattering or his intelligence being wiped off. Instead, he gave off a feeling that he was fighting against the thin membrane.

"This... This is..."

It was the first time Cang San Nu was completely and truly stunned. Su Ming was not the only one trembling, after all. The thin membrane was shuddering too.

Su Ming fixed his stare on the thin membrane in his hand. At the moment he touched it, his will boiled with a bang. It was boiling so intensely that Su Ming felt that an endless, boundless storm had stirred up in his mind, and it was sweeping through his divine sense.

His will was fighting against the thin membrane. As they suppressed each other, Su Ming's eyes filled with blood capillaries. At the instant a hint of madness appeared on his face, the image of a butterfly appeared behind him!

Regardless of whether it was Harmonious Morus Alba or Arid Triad, their wills took the form of butterflies, and as the third great will, Su Ming would naturally have the image of a butterfly once he brought out his full strength.

At the instant the butterfly's shadow appeared, the thin membrane began shuddering even more violently. A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He pulled back his right hand, and a loud bang shot up into the air.

Su Ming staggered ten thousand feet backwards and coughed up eight mouthfuls of blood. His face was pale, but crazed delight was in his eyes. He lifted his hand slowly and looked at the thin membrane clamped between his fingers!

Standing not too far away was Cang San Nu with a stark pale face. The scene before him overturned all that he knew. His body shuddered, and for the first time... real terror appeared in his heart.

This was the first time he met someone that the thin membrane could not kill. It was also the first time he met someone else besides himself who could subjugate it, and he had only been able to do it because his tribe had been worshipping it for countless years before they obtained a hint of power to control it.

However, he could only stick it to his chest, then throw it to kill someone. He did not know about any other methods to use it, much less how to utilize it well.

When he saw that Su Ming was staring at the thin membrane, Cang San Nu shuddered, and he felt his skin crawl. Without any hesitation, he turned around and used all his power to execute his fastest speed. He fled as if he had gone mad.

He was afraid, and it was fear and terror that he had not felt before. He did not know why Su Ming could subjugate the thin membrane, but in his mind, he could still see how the membrane had shuddered.

At first glance, the shudders were due to the membrane struggling and fighting against Su Ming, but when he recalled what had happened, those shudders... were clearly a form of excitement!

When he thought of this, Cang San Nu felt so indignant that he coughed up a mouthful of blood. He felt indignant, incredibly indignant. He had come with great confidence, but in the end, he had run over in vain and even delivered his supreme treasure into Su Ming's hands...

Su Ming did not pay any attention to Cang San Nu's departure. At that moment, he had directed all his attention to the thin membrane in his hand. He caressed it. The crazed delight in his eyes was gradually hidden away, replaced by a glint of surprise.

'This is... a fragment of Harmonious Morus Alba's wing!

‘Judging by how it looks and its presence, it clearly came from the same source as Harmonious Morus Alba’s will. Unless it belongs to another butterfly, it has come from Harmonious Morus Alba itself, which is the Expanse Cosmos I currently reside in!’

‘But... there were no damaged parts in all the Expanse Cosmoses in Harmonious Morus Alba to which I’ve gone. Then where did this fragment come from?’ A profound look appeared in Su Ming’s eyes, and his gaze suddenly focused.

‘The butterfly has four wings. One of them is Harmonious Morus Alba, another is Arid Triad, and one of them is Dark Dawn and Saint Defier... then that leaves the fourth Expanse Cosmos. Could it be... that the fragment came from that place?’

‘If it truly came from there... then how did Cang San Nu obtain it?!’

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming’s eyes. When he raised his head, he no longer found any traces of Cang San Nu in his line of vision. He let out a cold harrumph and put away the fragment of the butterfly’s wing. With a single move, he stepped into the air to give chase.

Chapter 1317: Viridian Gods

Cang San Nu’s face was pale. Cold sweat continued breaking out on his forehead. He was afraid now, completely terrified. It was not that he did not know about Su Ming’s strength, but before this, he had absolute confidence that he could win. He believed that the so-called strongest of this aeon could only turn into a puppet before his supreme treasure.

He did not think that any sort of unforeseen circumstances could ever appear because the fragment had been unbeatable multiple times in the past. This nature of the membrane had brought him indescribable confidence. Regardless of whether it was Dark Dawn, Saint Defier, or even Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, he did not regard them with any heed.

With the fragment, he stood above all cultivators. If Su Ming had not stepped into Yin Death Vortex and entered Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos, then before the fragment, he could only die. It would be virtually impossible for him to escape this disaster.

In fact... even if Su Ming had come out of Yin Death Vortex and had obtained the wills of four Great True Worlds to become the strongest will second only to Arid Triad and Harmonious Morus Alba in this butterfly’s universe, he would still have been unable to subjugate the fragment so easily!

The main reason why he could do it was because Su Ming had used the aura in the stone and cast the Art of Time to return to the past, allowing him to personally witness the black-robed man absorbing the butterfly. Once he saw that shocking scene, Su Ming overcame his fears and launched his strongest strike with his will against the black-robed young man from the past.

Su Ming's will might have disintegrated because of that strike, but in exchange, he went through a metamorphosis that allowed him to gain a new life. It was born after he overcame his fears and obtained a different mindset. Once he saw a powerful existence who could destroy a butterfly, it was naturally impossible for him to be shocked in any way when he saw a butterfly's wing fragment.

That was why Su Ming could use his will and fight against the fragment until it acknowledged the presence of Harmonious Morus Alba on him and let itself be subjugated.

All of this might sound simple, but to Su Ming, it had been a great, life-threatening disaster. Once he resolved it, he narrowed his eyes and lifted his head to look in the direction Cang San Nu had left. With one step, he rose into the air to give chase.

With Su Ming's level of cultivation, it was incredibly easy for him to catch a person, especially since the Expanse Cosmos in this place had already been filled with his will. With one thought, his figure appeared in the galaxy, and not too far away from him was the pale Cang San Nu.

Great regret filled Cang San Nu's heart. At the instant Su Ming's figure appeared, he turned his head around, and despair appeared on his face. The regret in his heart was one he had never experienced before in his whole life, and the despair drowned him like an ocean.

Once he was submerged, he could no longer remember anything. Su Ming's figure grew larger in his eyes until it replaced everything in his mind. A ferocious look appeared on his face, and in desperation, he chose to self-destruct.

Even if he had to die, he would do it by indulging in an act of madness. This was his pride as a cultivator in Avacaniya Realm, but it was insignificant before absolute power. When facing Su Ming, he did not have the right to self-destruct.

Su Ming's hand pushed down on the top of Cang San Nu's skull, then with a light tap, the tremor immediately shattered Cang San Nu's entire cultivation base. At the same time, his soul scattered, and Su Ming's soul surged into him. He... used his will to perform a Soulseek on Cang San Nu!

As Su Ming searched through his soul, Cang San Nu trembled violently. His face contorted. The pain he felt at that moment was the worst he had felt in his whole life, but

he could not fight against it. From the moment he decided to attack Su Ming, his fate had already been sealed.

Su Ming did not show any mercy. He had killed his whole life, and his murderous aura surged to the heavens. He had always been incredibly ruthless against those who came on their own to provoke him.

And it was especially so since Cang San Nu's memories contained something that perked his interest. Since that was the case, there was even less reason for him to let the man escape.

Time trickled by. When the time it takes for half an incense stick to burn was over, Su Ming lifted his right hand from Cang San Nu's head, and with a jolt, Cang San Nu's soul shattered completely. Cracks appeared on his body, and they continued spreading until his body broke apart and he turned into ashes that fell away from Su Ming's hand.

It was just like how ashes would return to ashes, and how dust would return to dust. All things would eventually return to the embrace of earth, never to return.

If time could reverse and if Cang San Nu knew about it, he would definitely not choose to stand against Su Ming. The truth had also proven that Yan Pei's actions were correct, and... that Zi Ruo was also correct.

The moment Cang San Nu died, Yan Pei, who was searching for the signs of Tian Xie Zi and the others in a galaxy within Dark Dawn's camp suddenly shuddered. His expression changed, and he brought his right hand up to pat his storage bag. Immediately, a jade slip appeared on his palm.

That jade slip had cracks on it. At that moment, right when Yan Pei cast a glance at it, the jade slip turned to powder.

Yan Pei was silent. After a long while, he let out a long sigh. The jade slip was Cang San Nu's Slip of Life. As Sovereigns of Dawn, the three of them each had their own Slips of Life so that they would know whether the others were still alive.

'Cang San Nu... died. The only person who could kill him... is Su Ming. I gave him a warning, but Cang San Nu's character...'

Yan Pei shook his head and no longer thought about it. Instead, he raised his chin up to complete Su Ming's orders even more enthusiastically than before.

If Yan Pei could sense Cang San Nu's death, then the only woman among the three Sovereigns of Dawn in Dark Dawn's camp, Zi Ruo of the Heavenly Foxes, naturally sensed it as well. She was sitting at the center of a complicated Rune on the altar belonging to the Heavenly Foxes. Before her was a swirling pink fog. Her beautiful face was very peaceful, but suddenly, she opened her eyes with a hint of shock.

Because of it, she appeared even more striking than before. It was enough for the hearts of all those who saw her to be tempted, regardless of whether they were men or women.

This sort of beauty surpassed all other forms of beauty in the universe. In fact, it would cause people to have the urge to keep this woman hidden after they saw her. If they did not have this beauty in their possession, they would be committing a slight against themselves!

She bit her bottom lip and stood up gently. There was a piece of silk gauze draped over her body so that no one could see her skin, but they could see her willow-like petite figure. It was enough to gather all gazes on her. It almost seemed like the woman had collected all beauty to herself.

She lowered her head, and when she lifted her hand, a cracked jade slip appeared on her palm. As she watched the jade slip turn into ash, Zi Ruo sighed softly.

“Why did you have to do this? Even if you had absolute confidence, you should not have done this. It’s impossible for Yan Pei to have lied about that person’s strength. Even if he lied, he would belittle that person instead. He would not exaggerate his strength.

“But since he clearly did not belittle that person’s strength nor exaggerate it, then based on our understanding of Yan Pei, that person must have surely subdued him and filled him with admiration to the point that he was willing to return to his past self, which was obsequious to others to curry their favor.” When Zi Ruo sighed, and a strange, brilliant light instantly appeared in her eyes.

“This is what it means to be the strongest person. Looks like I’ll have to be faster with my plan. If I can push him down...” As Zi Ruo mumbled, a faint red hue dusted her cheeks, but the resolve on her face grew firmer.

With a calm expression, Su Ming watched Cang San Nu’s body turn into nothingness. Then, he lifted his head and stared into the distant galaxy.

‘Viridian Gods... a tribe that loved going to all the strange places in the universe when the three ancient kingdoms were still around. The people of this tribe ventured out in search of all sorts of ruins once they became of age...

‘As for the fragment, a Viridian God obtained it at some unknown place and brought it back to his people...

‘Viridian Gods were eventually killed by Cang San Nu, and he obtained this item by chance.’

Su Ming thought back on the scenes he saw in Cang San Nu's memories. After a moment of pensive silence, he moved and disappeared into the air.

When he reappeared, he had already left Spiritling Expanse Cosmos. He moved through Expanse Cosmoses, and when he went to each, he would spread his will through it without hesitation. In an instant, the weak wills that had just been born in each Expanse Cosmos were absorbed, and as he walked past them, Su Ming's own will became stronger, but he did not attract Arid Triad's attention.

This was because Su Ming did not Possess them, and neither did he occupy the Expanse Cosmos. He instead devoured the wills and made them fuse with him to complete himself.

However, even after Su Ming had obtained the butterfly's wing fragment, he did not notice that every single time he walked past an Expanse Cosmos and devoured its will, the three black-robed men would split themselves to appear before each powerful warrior there, telling them in the name of Life Extermination Hall that the spirit of their Expanse Cosmos had been devoured, that their levels of cultivation would no longer increase, their lives would wither away, and all of it was because of a person called Su Ming.

If Su Ming was not sealed, they would surely die, and a disaster would definitely fall on their heads. There was only one way to solve this predicament—they had to work together to seal the evil Su Ming.

Every Expanse Cosmos Su Ming walked past filled with rumor. A hatred towards Su Ming gradually grew in many cultivators' hearts. They believed in Life Extermination Hall, and they believed even more so in their divine senses, which told them, when they sent them sweeping through their Expanse Cosmoses, that it had become much more withered than before.

When one or two people hated a person, that power would not be strong. If hundreds or thousands hated one person, they could no longer be underestimated. If ten thousand or one hundred thousand people hated a person, then the force of their hatred would begin to take shape...

If one million, ten million, or more people hated a person... then no matter what that person did, it was evil. Even if he was doing good, it would still be evil!

And at that moment, every single time Su Ming walked past an Expanse Cosmos, this sort of seeds would be scattered, and they were slowly showing signs of growing... but Su Ming did not notice the three black-robed men. They simply did not exist within the area covered by his will.

In fact, he was not the only one who did not notice them, for even Arid Triad did not notice them. Harmonious Morus Alba could not do it either. Unless it possessed its complete body once more, it would be unable to notice them.

The main reason for all of this was because someone had placed a drop of fresh blood on the three black-robed men's foreheads, and that blood could deceive heaven itself!

That blood was the Heaven Deceiver Blood.

Chapter 1318: It Came from the Vast Expanse!!

Su Ming moved so quickly that he managed to move through the Expanse Cosmoes in a flash, and he only stopped at an Expanse Cosmos that was located rather far away from Bear Chart Tribe. The place was in ruins, and the barrier to that Expanse Cosmos had been sealed.

The person who had done so was Cang San Nu. When he destroyed the Viridian Gods in the past, he had sealed up their Expanse Cosmos and turned it into his private property. No outsider was allowed to step foot in it.

His seal was so strong that only those in Avacaniya Realm could break it, which was why no one dared to try it. Cang San Nu was also so strong that he was the leader of the Sovereigns of Dawn. Hence, even those in Avacaniya Realm would not dare to break the seal to his place.

After Cang San Nu died, the seal became like a tree without roots. It started gradually dissolving. Su Ming watched the barrier of the Expanse Cosmos before him and took a step forward. The bald crane was the first to fly out, and as it let out a loud cry, it rammed its head against the barrier. When it phased through the barrier, Su Ming also walked through it.

Everything before him was ruins. Countless corpses floated in the galaxy, but they did not rot. The wreckage of the planets filled the galaxy. The space was full of the aura of death, which made it look like hell.

Su Ming swept his gaze over the area before his eyes landed at the center of the Expanse Cosmos. There was a tall palace there. It was damaged, but it did not collapse. It exuded an ancient presence, and the opened gates showed that everything inside was dark. It looked like a dead creature with its mouth wide open.

Based on Cang San Nu's memories, he had obtained the wing fragment from the palace. Su Ming swept his gaze over it, and with one move, he crossed an incredibly great distance to appear outside the palace. Then, he stepped inside it.

At the instant he walked in, the oil lamps all around him lit up on their own, showering him in light. With it, Su Ming saw a chair at the center of the palace. Sitting cross-legged on it was a corpse. It belonged to an old man who had lost his life force.

He was sitting quietly with his back straight. His right palm faced upwards, as if there was originally something placed there.

Su Ming stared at the old man's corpse. In Cang San Nu's memories, when he stepped into the palace, the old man was already dead, and he had been holding the wing fragment in his right hand.

Su Ming swept his gaze past the old man and looked around himself. There were a few murals around him, but they were very faint. Due to the passing of time and the destruction of the Viridian Gods, everything that remained was only a relic of the past.

But this did not affect Su Ming in the slightest. He walked to the old man and lifted his right hand to push it against the old man's own. At the moment they touched, Su Ming executed the Art of Time.

He continued standing in the hall, but the things he saw before his eyes were countless scenes that looked as if they were turning backwards. They passed by his eyes swiftly, as if time was moving in reverse. The murals became clearer, and the dust gradually vanished. When everything was as good as new, Su Ming saw Cang San Nu's figure appear in the hall.

With a murderous blood lust, the high-spirited Cang San Nu rained down bloody murder. Once he appeared in the hall and saw the old man's corpse, his expression turned incredibly complicated. After a long while... he took the fragment away from the old man's hand.

"Elder... when you chased me out of the tribe, did you ever think... that I, Cang Nu, would one day return like this?!"

A ferocious expression appeared on Cang San Nu's face, but after remaining silent for some time, he chose to only sigh and take the fragment with him. Then, he turned around and left.

Time continued reversing, and Su Ming saw that before Cang San Nu arrived in the hall, it was frequently cleaned and tidied up. There were also people worshipping it. The Viridian Gods lived in an age of prosperity, but while the murals were no longer blurry, the carvings depicting only normal ceremonies of people coming for worship. There was nothing about them that could benefit Su Ming.

That was until he saw many people carving those murals. They went from being clear to being indistinct again. When the walls became blank, new murals appeared, and these events repeated themselves. The murals were continuously carved out by someone, then repeatedly changed, but none of them were useful to Su Ming. But he was not in a hurry, so he continued to execute his Art of Time and watch in silence.

He lost track of how many times the murals around him had been changed. It lasted until the corpse before Su Ming slowly regained life force. When it came off of the corpse in thick waves, the old man returned to the time when he had yet to die. He stood in the hall with a pained expression while berating a teenager. That teenager knelt on the ground with his head lowered, but Su Ming could see the unwillingness to admit his wrongs and his resentment. The teenager was Cang San Nu.

Then, Su Ming saw the hall in an even more complete state. Time continued reversing...

The old man was silently looking at the wing fragment. He then lifted his right hand and wiped off all the murals around him.

At that moment, Su Ming's pupils contracted. He saw that the murals that had been wiped off were completely different from the ones he had seen previously. When Su Ming directed his attention on them, he saw that the murals that were wiped off were personally carved by the person who would end up dying in the chair!

The entire mural was divided into four parts.

The first part was a young man leaving the tribe after he worshiped his ancestors. His people sent him off to begin his personal journey to become an adult.

The second part of the mural was an old mausoleum into which the young man walked in. Around him were countless living creatures with different appearances. When a Rune appeared in the depths of the mausoleum, the young man stepped into it, and his figure became indistinct before he was Relocated.

The third part was clearly what had happened after he was Relocated. The young man appeared in a strange world. It looked like it was the Vast Expanse. Within that universe was a huge gap, and no one knew where it led to. When the young man approached the gap, an old man suddenly appeared in the gap.

The old man was covered in blood, and he stood on an ancient ship, as if he had been wandering about outside the gap for a long, long time before he managed to find it. This would allow him to step into the place for the first time.

The fourth part was the young man giving some medicinal pills to the old man as well as a jade slip containing a map. The old man wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to the young man. When he raised his arm, he tore a fragment from the gap and gave it to him.

The murals ended.

When Su Ming saw this, his heart trembled. As he continued watching it, the murals on the wall came to a point of time when they had yet to be carved onto the walls.

The four pictures eternally disappeared from the passage of time. It was difficult for anyone to be able to see it. What they saw was only another set of murals that appeared after the original was wiped off.

Su Ming opened his eyes, though in truth, he had never closed his physical eyes. At that moment, the eyes he opened were those of his will. He lifted his right hand from the corpse's hand. Everything around him returned to its previous state. It was still broken, it was still old, and the murals were still indistinct.

Su Ming was silent. The four murals clearly spoke of the experiences the corpse went through before he died, or rather, it spoke of the process he obtained the wing fragment. Clearly, he had never spoke of this with other people. Even the murals had been personally wiped off after he carved it. He did not want anyone to know about it.

Su Ming knew what had happened, but while he seemed calm, a raging storm had stirred up in his heart. It was impossible for him to be calm, and once he closed his eyes, the scenes on the murals continuously appeared in his mind.

'If those murals are true, then I can be certain that this fragment... isn't from another butterfly. It's a part of Harmonious Morus Alba's wings!

'Similarly, I can be certain that one of the four wings... has a gap... It's a gap that will lead us out into the Vast Expanse beyond!

'Since this gap isn't in Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos, in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos nor in Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. It should be... in the fourth wing's Expanse Cosmos!

'If all of this is true, then... he went to the fourth Expanse Cosmos in the past. The old man he saw when he was there... is from...' When Su Ming thought of this, he opened his eyes. His pupils shrank, and a thought which he could not control appeared in his mind. It caused his mind and heart to tremble.

'The old man... came from the Vast Expanse beyond!' Su Ming's breathing quickened. The scenes on the murals continuously appeared in his mind before he eventually fixed on the scene in which the old man stepped into the gap.

'His entire body is covered in blood. He should have been injured badly, and he used the ship as an Enchanted Vessel to move through space to arrive here. Who could possibly injure someone as strong as him, and just where did he come... Hmm?'

Su Ming jolted, and he instinctively took a few steps back. He remembered the scene of the black-robed young man destroying the butterfly.

Su Ming's expression changed swiftly.

'Is there a possibility... that he came from another butterfly's world? And before that butterfly was destroyed, he fled to this place! A ship... ship... I can remember a person who is always on an ancient ship. He is... the Old Man Extermination [1]'

Su Ming took a few steps back, and his expression continued changing. After a long while, he lifted his head swiftly to look at the corpse on the chair.

'Old Man Extermination brought with him a ship and searched through Arid Triad for the things he needed. All those whose offering he accepted had the right for their names to be entered into his ballad. That ballad would not die, and so all those whose names were inside it would not die too.

'He appeared in Arid Triad during the third era. This corresponds with the contents on the murals. Then, perhaps at that time... it was the first time he entered the world of Harmonious Morus Alba!

'He is the Old Man Extermination, and he came from Dark Dawn... Dark Dawn... This is also indeed Dark Dawn!' Su Ming's pupils shrank again. A cold chill rose from the bottom of his heart and filled his body.

'Then... what were his goals when he fled from his world once the black-robed young man destroyed it?!

'And where is he right now? Rumors say that the Old Man Extermination died during the end of the third era and turned into the Seed of Life Extermination. I have nourished half of it before. Now, the Seed of Life Extermination is completed... and it's with Su Xuan Yi and Lei Chen!

'Su Xuan Yi... what else does he know?!'

Su Ming closed his eyes. Only at that moment did he realize that even if he was the strongest power in his aeon, the fog of mystery before his eyes had only become thicker!

Chapter 1319: Will You Sit on a Sedan Chair or Will You Walk?

“The Old Man Extermination...” Su Ming mumbled. He had never expected that the origin of everything that had happened to him would be connected to this legendary person. Su Ming was not unfamiliar with the Seed of Life Extermination either. He had in fact nourished it for a long time until the one half of the Seed of Life Extermination grew fully.

Yu Xuan was also the same. All of it seemed to have a vague connection to Su Ming at that moment, especially since...

Perhaps other people would just say that the Old Man Extermination was just a legend, but Su Ming remembered clearly that he had indeed seen an old man on an ancient ship while he was in the Seed of Life Extermination.

In fact... even the bald crane had seen the Old Man Extermination before. At that time, the bald crane had even tried to obtain eternal life.

‘He was a powerful warrior who managed to escape from his world when it was destroyed by the black-robed young man. He managed to move through the Vast Expanse to arrive in this place. I... absolutely won’t believe that he has died in the passage of time!

‘Then since he hasn’t died, where is he and what are his goals? Su Xuan Yi had been obsessed with the Seed of Life Extermination, so he must surely know a lot more.’ Su Ming remained silent for a long time before he cast a glance at the hall again. Then, he turned around and left. With one step, he disappeared from that Expanse Cosmos.

Before he arrived in Dark Dawn and Saint Defier’s camps, Su Ming had thought he had come to understand Arid Triad as well as Harmonious Morus Alba, but only at that moment did he realize that there were some secrets that perhaps even Arid Triad and Harmonious Morus Alba did not know.

There was the black-robed young man who devoured the butterfly and the Old Man Extermination who entered through the gap from the Vast Expanse beyond. Compared to these, the formation of Harmonious Morus Alba’s gap was no longer something important.

The more he knew, the more Su Ming felt that the worlds formed by the four wings on Harmonious Morus Alba were too difficult to understand... Who created the nine butterflies in the Vast Expanse, and who gave them the ability to create worlds and lives?

Who was that black-robed young man, and why did he want to devour the butterflies?

Then there was also the Old Man Extermination. He had fled to this place barely escaping death. What... were his goals?

All these questions filled Su Ming's mind, and he left the Expanse Cosmos in silence. A brilliant light shone in his eyes at that moment. No matter how things would develop and regardless of whether Harmonious Morus Alba was damaged, whether Arid Triad's Possession would be successful, whether the black-robed young man would come, and what goals the Old Man Extermination had... Su Ming did not know those things well, and since that was the case, it would be pointless no matter how he mulled over them.

Right then, the most important thing for Su Ming was to make himself stronger. Even if he had become the strongest in his aeon, it was still not enough. He had to become the strongest person in all the aeons the four wings of Harmonious Morus Alba had experienced. In fact, he had to take a step further and become someone like the Old Man Extermination who could move through the Vast Expanse.

Only by doing so could he truly fight against all disasters. Even if he could not withstand the disaster, he could still preserve some of his strength so that there was a possibility for him to rise to power in the future.

With this sort of resolve, when Su Ming raised his head, his eyes sparkled brilliantly. He took a step forward and went to more Expanse Cosmoses in Dark Dawn to devour them. Not only would he devour Dark Dawn's Expanse Cosmoses, he would also devour Saint Defier's Expanse Cosmoses. Once he devoured all 360 Expanse Cosmoses in Dark Dawn and Saint Defier, his will would go through another metamorphosis.

It would then be strong enough to support him through his final spirit ascension!

The devouration lasted for nearly half a month. Wherever Su Ming went, no matter what race resided in it, the weak will born in that particular Expanse Cosmos would be fully devoured by him, but he did not bother any of the people in those Expanse Cosmoses.

In truth, this sort of devouration would not have too much of an effect on those people. It was just equivalent to him devouring the will in the Expanse Cosmos formed by the beliefs of the people in their tribe. In truth though, that will could not even be seen as the god worshiped by each tribe.

Once the will was devoured, the only harm to the tribe would be that it would no longer have the feeling of being one with the Expanse Cosmos. However, they could still continue with their practice in the path of cultivation, and the length of their life would remain the same. In fact, after some time had passed, another will would be born, and everything would return to normal.

However, there were only a few hundred years left before the disaster. Even if Su Ming did not devour those weak wills, they would be wiped off by the disaster.

But Su Ming still had not managed to notice that three black-robed men from Life Extermination Hall still followed him through all the Expanse Cosmos. They stirred up

resentment and flamed the fires of hate of countless people from multiple tribes towards him. They had sowed a seed that was absorbing all the negative emotions while it grew continuously.

While Su Ming devoured the wills in the Expanse Cosmoes, the bald crane lived its life in an incredibly fulfilling manner. Usually, when Su Ming devoured the will of an Expanse Cosmos, it would rely on its Transformation Art to gather all the crystals it could using all the despicable and dirty methods it could think of. However, to it, these were just small tricks. After all, it had even conducted scam marriages for the sake of crystals when it was in Black Ink Planet. Compared to those days, the bald crane was already much more merciful.

Half a month later, when Su Ming had devoured around seven-tenths of the 180 wills in Dark Dawn and was just about to continue—the bald crane also looked as if it had not looted its fill of crystals yet—Su Ming suddenly stopped when he walked past an Expanse Cosmos. He lifted his right hand and patted his storage bag. A jade slip immediately appeared in his hand.

It was the one in which Su Ming had a wisp of Yan Pei's soul, which could help them communicate. He cast a glance at the jade slip and sent his will to scan it. Immediately, Yan Pei's respectful voice rose in Su Ming's mind.

"Master, I have found traces of the people you asked for, but... Master, you should come to the Expanse Cosmos where the Heavenly Foxes reside first..."

There was some hesitation in his words. It seemed like he did not know how to put his thoughts into words and how to explain the matter at hand. He was worried that he would incite Su Ming's anger, which made him sound very nervous and hesitant.

Su Ming pondered over his words for a moment before he put away the jade slip. With one move, he headed towards the Expanse Cosmos where the Heavenly Foxes were based on the map in his head.

That Expanse Cosmos was one of the three-tenths of Expanse Cosmoes Su Ming had yet to devour. He did not know what sort of tribe the Heavenly Foxes were, but Yan Pei had told him once that the Sovereign of Dawn Zi Ruo belonged to them.

Su Ming did not have much of an impression of Zi Ruo, who Yan Pei had said to be the strongest woman in Dark Dawn's camp. As he moved forward, he did not waste a single moment to loiter around. In just the time it takes for half an incense stick to burn, he passed through multiple Expanse Cosmoes and stepped into the Expanse Cosmos which belonged to the Heavenly Foxes.

When he stepped into it, Su Ming immediately frowned. The galaxy in this Expanse Cosmos was not black, but pink. The pinkish hue would cause people to feel their bodies grow warm without their notice when they saw it, but this warmth did not mean

that their bodies had truly become warm. Instead, their blood flowed faster, and a hint of heat would pool in their bodies.

The unexpected scene gave Su Ming a very strange feeling, but with the might of his cultivation base and the great strength of his will, he did not think too much about it. After all, each Expanse Cosmos had its own characteristics that differentiated them from the others.

Almost at the instant Su Ming stepped into the Expanse Cosmos, long arcs charged towards him from up ahead. When he looked over, he found that all of them belonged to incredibly beautiful women. They did not wear revealing clothing, but gave off a demure and elegant feeling. All of them were stunning beauties.

They did not have a single flaw. When they came forward, they formed two long rows in front of Su Ming. Each of the women had a smile on her face as they lifted red lanterns high above their heads, illuminating the pink galaxy in a manner that it instantly filled it with a feeling as if it was a rose. It looked incredibly dazzling, and there was an ambiguous air in the area which Su Ming could not put to words.

Yet that ambiguous air was incredibly faint. If there was anyone who had wicked intentions in their hearts, they would be able to sense it incredibly clearly. Yet if those who were pure in heart saw this, they would only think that this place was incredibly beautiful. Su Ming was not the former, and neither was he the latter. He frowned and cast a cold glance at the long path formed by the two rows of women. He had no idea where it would lead to.

Regardless of whether the women were pretty or ugly, they could not catch Su Ming's attention. The urges were not strong in him, because he had never had those kind of experiences in his life...

"We, the Heavenly Foxes, greet senior Su Ming."

The women spoke softly, and their quiet words had a dignified air as they bent their knees in a small bow to Su Ming. Their voices were incredibly pleasant to the ears, sounding as soft as velvet, but not licentious. Their words were respectful, but also seemed as if they were unintentionally teasing someone, though no one knew whether this was just a figment of their imagination.

Even Su Ming could not help but cast a few glances at them. When he heard them speak, he too found them very pleasant to the ears, which made the frown disappear from his face.

"Senior, this way please. Our tribe leader, Sovereign Zi, and Sovereign Pei are both before us. They are kowtowing towards this place to welcome you," one of the two women in the front said softly. Her eyes moved to Su Ming, but there was a pure look on her face.

Su Ming nodded. When he was about to take a step forward, the other woman quickly knelt down and spoke softly.

“Senior, would you like to sit on a sedan chair, or would you like to walk?” The woman’s voice was as clear as bells. When it reached Su Ming’s ears, it felt like warm rain had poured on his heart. A comfortable feeling rose in him without his knowledge, and Su Ming stopped to look at her.

“What do you mean by sedan chair?” he asked faintly.

When he said that, Su Ming was immediately stunned, because more than one hundred women from among the two rows instantly gathered together. They placed their hands on the shoulders of the woman before them, and in the blink of an eye, they formed the shape of a snake!

At the center of the snake formation was a soft chair formed by the bodies of around a dozen women, creating... an incredibly erotic sedan chair.

“Senior, please get on the sedan chair.”

The woman who had spoken to Su Ming previously bent her knees and bowed to him. She spoke softly, and there was not a hint of change on her face. She looked as proper and dignified as ever, as if this sort of sedan chair was universally accepted. If someone thought too much into it, it was not the women’s fault, but the person’s alone...

Su Ming fell silent.

Chapter 1320: Baldy’s Anger

If it had been Su Ming from one thousand something years ago, he would have definitely blushed. He might not pay too much attention to the workings between men and women, but he still understood some principles about dual cultivation...

But the current Su Ming was known as an old monster. He might feel slightly uncomfortable and awkward about this, but not a single sign of these emotions showed on his face. He swept his gaze past the sedan chair formed by the coquettish women, then decided to just walk over and sit on the erotic sedan chair.

Underneath Su Ming was a seat formed by the soft bodies of around a dozen women. When he sat down, he immediately sensed the softness under him, but he did not bother himself with what part of the women’s bodies he was sitting on. Su Ming just closed his eyes and began meditating as well as exercising his breathing.

Once Su Ming sat down, a look of scorn immediately appeared in the bald crane's eyes. It flew over while looking like it was incredibly unwilling to do so. It sat down next to Su Ming with an expression that spoke about how it was already nitpicking the chair in its head. It looked around itself, and the scorn on its face grew stronger.

"It's just a bunch of skin and flesh, so what's there to show off? Hmph, once I have feathers on my body, I will definitely look even better than these women," the bald crane mumbled under its breath and patted a certain bulging part of a woman's body beside it.

"Sure is soft... But they look so ugly. They don't even have any feathers on them. So ugly, ah, so ugly... Hah... when can I ever find a beautiful female crane who can fly with me?"

As the bald crane sighed with great emotion, it instinctively squeezed the body part with a scornful and contemptuous look on its face. It did not go away...

Su Ming did not pay attention to the bald crane's actions. As the sedan chair beneath him moved, a pleasant fragrance wafted to his nose. The two rows of incredibly beautiful women lifted Su Ming and walked forward. In the beginning, Su Ming could not really get used to it, but soon, he opened his eyes. His expression was calm. While he remained seated on the sedan chair, he looked at the pink galaxy around him. Soon after, he stopped meditating and leaned against a woman who had immediately sat up demurely when she saw Su Ming leaning back. She used her back to support his weight.

This form of treatment and enjoyment was something Su Ming had never experienced since he could remember himself. When he leaned back, a lot of hands immediately stretched out from the chair around him and began massaging him gently. If... Su Ming's willpower was not great, the feeling this brought would have caused even him to be momentarily lost.

The bald crane also received the same erotic treatment as Su Ming, but its body was slightly smaller... so when the hands caressed it, the bald crane's figure was practically buried under the flesh and skin it regarded with scorn just moments ago...

Su Ming did not refuse. He was a temperamental person and always acted as he pleased. He did not have a lot of morals tying him down. Since he had already sat down on the sedan chair, he did not intend to put on the airs of a someone with high moral standards.

But neither would he do anything out of hand. After all... he did not know what sort of action would be considered as out of hand. He only leaned back against the woman and allowed the sedan chair to move. When about an hour passed, a huge circle of light appeared in front of Su Ming.

It shone with a pink light. As it spread out, a girl with a pink silk gauze dress appeared within it. The appearance of this woman was enough to instantly attract all gazes. At the moment she appeared, the beauty of the women surrounding Su Ming instantly paled in comparison.

When compared to normal women, the women around Su Ming were as brilliant as the bright moon, but when they were compared to the woman in the pink dress, they were just the faint glow of a firefly.

The woman in pink was tall. She had a slim figure and not many astonishing curves. However, this gave her a weak and delicate feeling, causing all those who saw her to immediately feel affection for her.

Purple crystals acted as ornaments at the center of her brow. When she chuckled sweetly, an indescribable charm appeared without her notice, causing all those who saw her to never be able to forget her.

The woman's beauty came from her fair wrist that could only be barely seen through her sleeves, her eyes that looked as if they were sparkling water from a spring, her fingers that were long and fair like white jade, and her lips that were so red that she looked as if she had a red pearl in her mouth. Every twinkle in her eye and every smile on her lips could cause a person's heart to pound.

All the women Su Ming had seen in his life, be it Bai Ling, Cang Lan, Xu Hui, or even Yu Xuan could not compare to this woman's beauty. It could be said that the beauty before him was the most gorgeous lady Su Ming had ever seen in his life!

Once the gentle smile, the seemingly indescribable loveliness in her eyes, the dignified air, and her faint charm fused together, the impact could cause all lives to pale in comparison before her.

Even if Yan Pei was also a Sovereign of Dawn, when he stood next to her, he could not help but be a much paler presence, causing all those who looked over to be unable to help themselves but overlook him. Yan Pei seemed to know about this, which was why he chose not to be too close to her, but even so, he still could not avoid being ignored.

There were other Heavenly Foxes around the woman, and about eight-tenths of them were women. Only two-tenths of them were men, and all of them were handsome men. They surrounded the area, and the moment they saw Su Ming, they knelt down and worshiped him.

"We greet Senior Su."

While their voices were echoing in the galaxy, the woman in pink chuckled softly and took a step forward. Her gaze landed on Su Ming who was on the sedan chair. When she saw him, she bent her knees slightly and opened her mouth.

"I am Zi Ruo. Greetings, Senior Su."

Even though they were both Sovereigns of Dawn, but her choice and attitude were completely different from Cang San Nu's. When her gentle voice tumbled out of her lips, Yan Pei cast a strange look at her, and his heart shuddered. Based on his understanding of Zi Ruo, he felt like he could tell what she was thinking, and it left him shocked.

'This... This Zi Ruo... She...' Yan Pei sucked in a sharp breath and immediately lowered his head to bow to Su Ming.

Su Ming was still leaning against the woman while sitting on the sedan chair. He swept his gaze across Yan Pei and Zi Ruo. Even though he had never met Zi Ruo before, he could still tell that this woman... was the third Sovereign of Dawn.

"Well then, tell me why you have asked me to come to this place," Su Ming said flatly while leaning against the woman. Leaning back and sitting on the soft bodies was incredibly comfortable.

Su Ming's voice was flat and indifferent, but when it landed in Yan Pei's ears, it caused his heart to tremble. All his jumbled thoughts were immediately swept away. He steeled his expression and took a few steps forward. When he wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming, he immediately spoke,

"Master, this is..." Just when Yan Pei was about to continue speaking, Zi Ruo took over with a gentle voice. She looked at Su Ming with her beautiful eyes, and her voice was soft and gentle, as if she was a little anxious.

"Senior Su, please don't blame him. This is my fault. That matter all those years ago... There were indeed a few people in Arid Triad's Divine Essence Star Ocean who had not opened the tunnel but used the power of the tunnel to come to Dark Dawn's camp.

"And they... are in the Heavenly Foxes' Expanse Cosmos.

"But we can swear by the Heavenly Foxes' destiny that we have never seen those people before. When they were Relocated to our Expanse Cosmos, they were sucked into... a strange place in our Expanse Cosmos."

Zi Ruo lowered her head when she spoke quietly. She did not lie, for she would she not dare to hide anything. Even though she did not know what sort of divine abilities Su Ming had, the Art of reversing time Yan Pei had mentioned was enough for Su Ming to be able to crush all lies.

Su Ming appeared calm, and his emotions could not be seen on his face, but he was no longer leaning against the woman. Instead, he had sat up straight. While staring at Zi Ruo, he said calmly, "Continue."

This one simple word was enough to make Zi Ruo's heart shudder, but the more it was so, the stronger the fire in her heart burned. It filled her entire body, causing her to gain a feeling of wanting to lower her head before a powerful warrior. There was no form of indignation within this feeling, but indescribable security.

The mighty pressure from Su Ming's gaze caused Zi Ruo's heart to race. The thought... of pushing him down instantly became incredibly strong in her mind.

"They are in the Old Man Extermination's tomb. The Old Man Extermination was once a legend in all the Expanse Cosmoes in Dark Dawn's camp. Before he died, four of the 180 Expanse Cosmoes in Dark Dawn built his tomb, and one of those tombs is in Heavenly Fox Expanse Cosmos.

"The people who were Relocated here from Divine Essence Star Ocean... have been sucked into the Old Man Extermination's tomb," Zi Ruo explained gently with her head still lowered.

"The Old Man Extermination's tomb?"

Su Ming stood up slowly from the sedan chair formed by the women. A brilliant light shone in his eyes. Before he gained an understanding of the wing fragment and had come to the conclusion that the Old Man Extermination came from the Vast Expanse, Su Ming would not have thought too much into what Zi Ruo said, but right then...

Su Ming's eyes sparkled before that glow disappeared. Once a calm look settled in his eyes, he took a step forward and walked out of the erotic sedan chair formed by the women to arrive before Zi Ruo.

When he approached her, Zi Ruo felt a presence that could suppress her come crashing into her face, and it made her instinctively want to move back, but she forced that urge down. Instead, she lifted her head and stared at Su Ming walking towards her.

Her eyes were incredibly beautiful, like stars, but when Su Ming saw them, his expression remained as aloof as ever. He arrived before Zi Ruo and said faintly, "You will lead the way to the Old Man Extermination's tomb."

The bald crane's shriek shot up into the galaxy from the sedan chair formed by the women. As it shrieked, it struggled and finally managed to extract itself from the hands after much difficulty. Then, it flapped its wings and flew while looking incredibly disheveled. The derision and contempt on its face had long since disappeared to turn into terror.

"Damn it, damn it... You can't touch that place, you... you..."

The bald crane flew out in a disheveled state and immediately went to Su Ming. When it turned its head back, the sedan chair dissolved itself into the many chuckling women again. The bald crane immediately shuddered.

“These bags of skin and flesh... these damn bags of skin and flesh, how dare they treat the great Grandpa Crane like this? How dare they touch that place... I... I... I...” The bald crane was livid. Even its featherless body had turned red due to its rage at that moment.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1321: Old Man Extermination's Tomb - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1321: Old Man Extermination's Tomb Bin Chapter 1321: Old Man Extermination's Tomb

The bald crane looked like it was so angry that it could no longer contain its rage. It was about to let out a piercing screech and charge back into the crowd of women, which it thought had humiliated it, when Zi Ruo voiced her obedience while standing in front of Su Ming. She turned into a long arc to lead the way.

With a calm expression on his face, Su Ming went after Zi Ruo and walked towards the distant galaxy. Yan Pei immediately followed suit. When the bald crane saw all of them leave, it immediately stopped halfway through its charge. It threw a fierce glare at the group of women, and as they chuckled while looking as charming as ever, the bald crane's anger drained from its body. It could not even throw harsh words at them. When it turned around, it mustered its fastest speed and left the place as if it was fleeing.

The pink galaxy in Heavenly Fox Expanse Cosmos had a unique beauty to it. After they walked for about the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, Zi Ruo suddenly stopped. The color of the galaxy before them changed. It was no longer pink, but had turned black. That black shade was like a vortex, but it did not rotate. Instead, it looked like it had been frozen in time.

The black hue and the pink color around it formed a stark contrast. The frozen black vortex might not have been rotating, but it still gave others a feeling as if it could devour everything.

In fact, if someone cast their gaze at that place, they would feel as if they were about to be sucked inside. Distortions would appear in the black frozen vortex, but in truth, the vortex did not distort. What was distorted was the people's gazes.

A faint presence filled the vortex, but neither Zi Ruo nor Yan Pei could detect it. Only Su Ming could immediately notice the presence's existence at the instant he saw the vortex.

'As I expected...' Su Ming's pupils shrank in a barely noticeable manner. The presence was incredibly unique. It did not belong to Harmonious Morus Alba, but... to the Vast Expanse beyond!

The presence came from the Vast Expanse beyond!

'This vortex has the presence of the Vast Expanse beyond. So what is its purpose?' Su Ming scrutinized the vortex and frowned. He could not tell what its use was, but he was certain that it was definitely not Old Man Extermination's tomb.

"There are four of these tombs around?" Su Ming asked Zi Ruo, who was next to him, while staring at the vortex.

"There are indeed four of them, but for some reason, two of them have disappeared from their Expanse Cosmoses. One of the two remaining tombs is here, and the other one is in Tiger Cagers' Expanse Cosmos," Zi Ruo quickly said.

Su Ming was silent for a moment. He moved forward, but just as he was about to step into the vortex and investigate it, Zi Ruo grit her teeth and immediately took a few steps forward.

"Senior Su, please wait. Old Man Extermination's tomb lays in our Expanse Cosmos, so even though he might be a legendary figure, our people could not help but go in there to investigate it. Over the years, we have come to understand it very well. If you have anything you need, I can serve as a guide for you."

Once Zi Ruo finished speaking, she looked at Su Ming.

He pondered over her words for a moment before he turned his head around to cast a glance at Zi Ruo. He saw a strange glow in her eyes, then nodded.

"Lead the way." As Su Ming spoke, he walked towards the vortex.

Zi Ruo immediately felt her spirits lift. A smile appeared on her face, and she flew forward to lead the way.

As for the bald crane, a thought appeared in its mind. Just as it was about to follow Su Ming, Yan Pei brought his hand up and caught the bald crane. It flew up in rage, believing that Yan Pei was humiliating it again, but just when its rage was about to reach boiling point, Yan Pei sighed.

“Oh well, since you can’t appreciate an expression of goodwill and want to go with them, I will not stop you.”

The bald crane was momentarily stunned. It blinked, then asked with a cold harrumph, “Huh? What do you mean?”

“Can’t you tell that Zi Ruo volunteered to follow master?” Yan Pei asked in a profound manner while staring at the bald crane.

“So what? If she wants to follow him, then let her. Why can she be the only one who follows him? I’m telling you, young Yan Zi, there might be plenty of crystals hidden in the tomb!” the bald crane said in contempt while laughing coldly.

But just when it was about to turn around and follow Su Ming, Yan Pei sighed long and hard again. His sigh immediately caused the bald crane to feel goosebumps on its skin. It turned around again and glared at Yan Pei.

“Damn it, why do you keep sighing?! If you have something to say, then get straight to the point! I don’t have time to indulge myself in flights of fancy!”

Yan Pei sighed in his heart and explained things in detail. “Zi Ruo is a beautiful woman. She volunteered to follow master on her own, and master did not refuse her. So... don’t you think there is...”

“You mean, passionate love?” the bald crane immediately continued the sentence, then lifted its claw and scratched its head.

While it thought it over, Su Ming and Zi Ruo stepped into the black vortex and disappeared without a trace. When they were about to step in, Su Ming turned his head back to cast a glance at the bald crane. When he saw that it did not come with him, he did not bother about it either. The bald crane’s safety was guaranteed in Dark Dawn’s camp.

Besides, with the bald crane’s cunning, it would usually come up with astonishing schemes when its life was in danger, or else it would have been impossible for it to have led such a good life before meeting Su Ming.

Its safety was especially guaranteed when it had the divine ability which allowed it to seem to be indescribably powerful when it was cast. It had also allowed the bald crane to deceive others and empty their pockets of crystals.

Once Su Ming stepped into the frozen vortex, his eyes shone as he looked around him.

“There are three layers to Old Man Extermination’s tomb. Based on the investigations the Heavenly Foxes have conducted over the years, they are an imitation of the layers of heaven, earth, and man. The first layer is heaven. It is filled with a never-ending

stretch of sky. All sorts of sky exist here, and it makes it impossible for people to find the entrance to the next layer.

“The second layer is earth. That place is filled with boundless land. Different sorts of terrain are connected together to form a hell without bounds.

“The last layer is the layer of man. Since ancient times, only one person from our people has managed to step into that place successfully. After he left behind a jade slip in the second layer, we lost all contact with this ancestor of ours,” Zi Ruo explained.

Su Ming looked around him and found that they were surrounded by a stretch of blue sky.

Every direction around him was a part of the sky. There were white clouds amid the endless blue sky, and he felt as if he was standing in the sky. In fact, when Su Ming sent his divine sense across the area, he found that he could not figure out whether there was land beneath the stretch of sky despite the strength of his divine sense.

He could not see it!

This sort of matter was impossible, because the strength of Su Ming’s divine sense came from his will, but it did happen, which meant that there was only one possibility. There was some sort of seal Su Ming could not understand in this place, and it was precisely because of that the sky appeared endless.

If he tried to search for the depths, he might end up walking in circles and walk through a spot repeatedly without even noticing it.

“Since you can’t find the entrance to the second layer, how did your people manage to enter it?” Su Ming asked calmly.

Zi Ruo chuckled softly. She turned her head to look at Su Ming while standing beside him. Her faint makeup made it look as if spring itself was contained in her eyes. They twinkled brightly with intelligence. Her cherry pink lips were red even without lipstick and delicate like water droplets. The two locks of hair by her cheeks gently caressed her face as wind blew against her, adding a tempting charm to her.

She twirled her hair. In her long pink dress, her waist looked as if it would snap if anyone exerted force on it, and when she moved, she looked like a dazzling picture that was so beautiful it had no flaws and seemed like it came from another world.

Zi Ruo knew just how beautiful she was and just when and how she was supposed to present her beauty, such as at that moment. There was wind in the sky right then, and her hair was lifted by it. She used it to present her beauty to Su Ming.

'Hehe, even if you are an old monster with an unfathomable level of cultivation, I won't believe that you won't be tempted.' Zi Ruo looked at Su Ming with a charming smile, but as she stared at him, she saw him frown.

"I asked you a question," he said. The woman before him was indeed beautiful, but to Su Ming, she seemed to be slightly slow in her mind.

Su Ming's words immediately caused Zi Ruo's intention of showing off her beauty like a peacock spreading its tail feathers to instantly shatter. All her previous actions as well as her covert temptations to instantly crack and crumble.

"... That is because there are some strange gusts in the first layer. Once they form a whirlwind, it will create an invisible path leading to the entrance to the second layer, and it will suck us in it.

"But not all people can be sucked into it. There are some who can enter the second layer smoothly, and some who get rejected. There are even some who die.

"There are some type of Air Spirits in the first layer. They are invisible, but they can absorb your Qi and blood. The longer you stay here, the weaker you will get.

"The sky here is different as well. Right now, it is clear where we are, but if we move forward, soon, we will be able to see the sky in other forms, such as thunderstorms, a cloudy sky, a fog shrouded sky, a snowing sky, a rainy day... Different spirits exist in different pieces of sky. They also differ in terms of strength. The weak ones will not be able to even withstand a single blow, and the powerful ones are creatures that even those in Avacaniya Realm will find difficult to handle.

"But in the end, the first layer isn't that dangerous. The true danger lies in the second layer."

Zi Ruo felt a ball of frustration well up in her heart, but she could not show it. Hence, in her gloomy mood, she told Su Ming everything she knew in one go.

When Su Ming was in the first layer of Old Man Extermination's tomb, there were three figures standing in a Rune in the vast layer known as the Layer of Man, which was the third layer of Old Man Extermination's tomb. They were waiting for the activation of the Rune.

Naturally, those three people were the black-robed men Su Ming had been unable to detect!

Several breaths later, the Rune shone with a brilliant light, and the three figures disappeared. When they reappeared, they were already in another world...

It was a world filled with booming sounds. Over the countless years, it had always been filled with those loud bangs, making it seem like it was a world belonging to sound.

The galaxy trembled, and ripples spread out. When the booming sounds filled the area, the three black-robed men appeared before a huge ship.

That ship had an ancient air about it, as if it had come from ancient times. It floated in the galaxy, and behind it... was a huge gap.

The gap looked like it was made by someone tearing the galaxy open... and the Vast Expanse could be seen beyond it!

Chapter 1322: When One Harmonious Morus Alba is Destroyed, an Abnormality Will Definitely Appear

The Vast Expanse was beyond Harmonious Morus Alba, and due to the existence of the gap, it filled the place with a large amount of aura from the universe beyond. It crashed against Harmonious Morus Alba's world and formed... the booming sounds that would never disappear.

In the gap was a huge ship. A figure could be seen sitting cross-legged at its bow. The person was dressed in a gray long robe, which had a toad with a dragon head embroidered on it.

That picture had never been seen in Arid Triad, Harmonious Morus Alba, or Dark Dawn as well as Saint Defier. It was a picture that did not belong to any of them!

The person dressed in the gray long robe was an old man. He had his head lowered, which hid his face. The only thing that could be seen was his long gray hair. He was only described as an old man because when anyone cast their gaze on him, they would sense the ancient presence coming from his person. It was the most direct feeling that would cause others to think he was an old man.

Once the three black-robed men saw the old man in gray, they knelt down and worshiped him.

"Master, after he devoured seven-tenths of Dark Dawn's Expanse Cosmotes, he entered the third marked board. He's at the first layer right now. We've already spread the rumors based on your instructions in the Expanse Cosmotes whose wills he devoured," one of the black-robed men said with a low, respectful tone.

"It's still not enough..." After a long while, an old voice came from the gray-robed figure sitting on the ship.

It had a strange accent. The old man might have been speaking in the language used by all the lives in Arid Triad and Harmonious Morus Alba, but he seemed to not want to change his native accent, causing all those who heard it once to never be able to forget it.

The black-robed man remained silent for a moment before he spoke. When he did, a grim and murderous expression appeared on his face. "Yes! We'll immediately go back and continue spreading rumors about this matter. As for Saint Defier... we'll pretend to be this person and devour the wills of the Expanse Cosmoes in Saint Defier's camp. We'll even begin killing them."

Once he finished speaking, his body immediately disappeared. The other two black-robed men beside him also disappeared with murderous looks on their faces. When they vanished, the ship sank into silence, but it was accompanied by the constant rumbles in the area, which never stopped.

In the relative silence, the gray-robed old man on the huge ship slowly lifted his head to reveal... a face with blue eyes. He was not at all old, but appeared to be nearing his middle age.

"When one Harmonious Morus Alba is destroyed, an anomaly will definitely appear! This is a destiny all nine Harmonious Morus Albas cannot escape... This butterfly is bound to perish in this aeon, and it means... that the strongest person of all aeons the butterfly has lived through will appear in this aeon!

"He'll be just like me in the past..." the gray-robed man mumbled. A tormented look of nostalgia appeared on his face. He lifted his right hand and clenched his fist tightly.

"Since they will be the strongest of all aeons in this Harmonious Morus Alba, external forces will be unable to destroy him. Only... by using Harmonious Morus Alba's own strength... will I be able to seal this person!

"I will seal you. Only once I seal you will I be able to fully execute my plan... How many times has it been?"

As the gray-robed man mumbled under his breath, a thought-provoking smile suddenly appeared at the corners of his lips. He brought his right hand up and swung his arm outwards.

With it, the rumbles in the Expanse Cosmos instantly grew much louder. At the same time, his ship gradually became indistinct amid the loud booms until it completely disappeared.

But it did not mean that the ship had left into the distance. Instead, it had hidden itself.

.....

Su Ming lifted his right hand and swung his arm. With a bang, violent gusts of wind howled in the first layer of Old Man Extermination's tomb. They charged towards the thunder and rain and crashed into them, resulting in a loud bang. Ripples spread through the sky and made it tremble nonstop.

It was a sky plagued by thunderstorms.

As the wind Su Ming stirred crashed against the thunder and rain in the sky, a huge whirlwind appeared. Su Ming stepped into it, but when he touched it, booming sounds shot into the air, and the whirlwind disintegrated.

"This is the ninth time!" Su Ming stood in the thunderstorm and stared at the disintegrating vortex before he turned his head to cast a glance at Zi Ruo.

There was a gentle screen of light around Zi Ruo's body. It blocked off the rain from touching her. At that moment, she looked at Su Ming with a slightly strange expression on her face. The whirlwind should have served as the entrance to the second layer, but they encountered them eight times before the last one, and to no avail. Each one was supposed to lead them out, but when Su Ming touched them, they would disintegrate.

It was the ninth time it had happened.

"This is..." Zi Ruo did not know what to say.

"Since there is someone who does not want to make my journey smoother and to let me step into the second layer, then..."

Su Ming cast a glance at the sky around them. He had long since noticed that there were spirits residing in the air. There were quite a number of them, hidden around them while they stared at Su Ming and Zi Ruo with greed.

"Then I will use my own method to open a gap."

When Su Ming said those words, he lifted his right hand and seized the air in the direction of the sky. With it, the sky roared. The thunderstorm instantly tumbled backwards, causing the rain to shudder. Shrill screams swiftly rang out in the sky.

They came from all the spirits around Su Ming who had been staring at him with greed. Once Su Ming seized the air, they were forced to show themselves, as if Su Ming's right hand had turned into a vortex that instantly sucked all of them towards him.

Su Ming let out a cold harrumph and spread out his will. His will instantly swept out in all directions and filled the raining sky, cloudy sky, snowing sky and all the other sorts of skies. He made them gather together, and the entire sky roared. All the spirits were herded by Su Ming's will towards him. They had to come, because Su Ming's will was like a death scythe. If they did not go towards him, they would surely die.

As the spirits in the sky continued gathering around him, their numbers gradually increased to an astonishing degree. Slowly, they grew to an amount where people could no longer calculate their numbers. Su Ming then pushed down with his right hand. With it, the innumerable spirits in the area charged towards him. They formed a whirlwind that was visible to the eye.

The whirlwind was shaped like a cone. At the instant it appeared, the booming sounds grew deafening. The whirlwind became larger and continued stretching to the area beneath them, as if it had turned into a spinning top.

As the booming sounds echoed in the air, visible distortions appeared in the area below them. Cracks instantly appeared, but they swiftly closed up. However, as the booming sounds became louder and the spirits continued swimming in the whirlwind while shuddering because Su Ming's will forced them to do it regardless of all costs, the mending of the cracks could no longer catch up to the rate they appeared. Cracking sounds rang out, and as more cracks appeared, the sky was drilled open.

Doing such a thing was not difficult to Su Ming. He only drove all the spirits to move, forcing them to break open the sky. However, when Zi Ruo saw this, her breathing quickened. Her pupils constricted, and a hint of shock appeared on her face.

This was the first time she saw Su Ming's true power, though she was a little unsure whether what he showed at that moment was truly the limits of his strength. After all, based on Su Ming's expression, he looked incredibly relaxed... but to Zi Ruo, being able to manipulate all the spirits in the first layer already exceeded the limits of her imagination.

After all, while the spirits varied in strength, the powerful ones were extremely troublesome existences that could even make those in Avacaniya Realm frown. Yet right then, when she looked across the land, she found that there was no end to the spirits, and there were quite a large number of the powerful ones... but not a single one of them showed any signs of disobedience to Su Ming's will. They were swimming around in the whirlwind, obeying his will to make the whirlwind become stronger.

This was enough to tell just how powerful Su Ming was. He terrified the spirits and made them tremble... but this was still not Su Ming's limit. The impact of this truth was incredibly strong on Zi Ruo, causing her breathing to quicken, and when she looked at Su Ming, her desire to push him down reached its peak.

She gave up on the thought to tempt him, because the events before had already proved to her that those methods were ineffective. No matter how she tried to show off her beauty, it was nothing in Su Ming's eyes. If that was the case, then it would be better for her to use other methods.

Zi Ruo forced down her excitement, and a hint of pink appeared in her eyes.

'I can only use the Great Inversing Soul Art! Fortunately, I've already made my preparations before this. Judging by the time, the arrangements I made in the tribe should have already been activated.

'Su Ming, I will definitely obtain you! Only the strongest of this aeon will be able to form the perfect life with me.' Zi Ruo clenched her fists, and as she gave herself motivation, her expression grew more determined.

Su Ming did not know what Zi Ruo was thinking, but when he saw the determined look on her face, a crease appeared between his eyebrows. He constantly felt that this woman only had beautiful looks but no brains, but based on logic, it was impossible for a stupid person to reach Avacaniya Realm.

Yet Zi Ruo was constantly slow to react and daydreamed all the time. Yet right then, for some weird reason, she appeared determined. If she harbored any sort of killing intent, Su Ming would have been able to notice it, but no matter how he looked at it, the woman did not seem to want to kill him.

Since that was the case, he chose not to pay any attention to her. He averted his gaze and fixed his stare on the whirlwind. At that instant, it suddenly let out a bang, and the cracks filling the air suddenly increased in number. When loud booming sounds shot into the air, a huge gap was dug out by the spinning vortex.

At the instant the gap appeared, Su Ming swung his arm, and the vortex dissipated. The countless spirits in it elbowed each other as they rushed in all directions.

Su Ming took a step forward and charged into the gap.

Zi Rui quickly followed him. The two of them turned into two long arcs that instantly vanished into the gap into the second layer of Old Man Extermination's tomb—the Layer of Earth.

At the instant he stepped in, Su Ming lifted his right hand without even looking around him. He seized the air above him, where the gap was, and when a great suction force spread out, the spirits who had dispersed swiftly come to a halt before they tumbled back towards the gap.

"Drill a hole through the second layer, and I will grant you freedom!"

As Su Ming's voice echoed in the air, he seized the spirits with his right hand and pushed them towards the ground. With it, the spirits immediately started howling. They charged towards the ground in resignation and formed a whirlwind to drill open a hole through the second layer as well.

Chapter 1323: Has He Arrived?

The second layer of Old Man Extermination's tomb was earth. The land there was the same as the ever-changing sky, which meant there were different terrains. There were mountains, plains, canyons, rivers, lakes, and oceans. All sorts of terrain could be seen, making people feel as if they could see the entire world when they looked over.

The volcanoes in the distance erupted. When lava flowed out, black fog spread through the area. The spot in which Su Ming descended was where one of the volcanoes had erupted.

He did not bother about it however. He pushed his right hand towards the ground, and the spirits charged to the ground with a howl and turned into a whirlwind. As they spun rapidly, they touched the ground like an awl. It caused the ground to tremble, and cracks instantly appeared on it.

Su Ming did not need to know how to enter the next layer. He would use his own method to break through all barriers. There were only a few people who could do this in the world, and Su Ming was strong enough to be one of them.

As the strongest of his aeon, he had learned many secrets, and while Su Ming was lost as to where his future led, he did not have an ounce of respect towards Old Man Extermination. Instead, he was overflowing with fighting spirit.

At that moment, the ground trembled, and cracks swiftly spread out. Loud booming sounds came up from the ground. Su Ming stood on the volcano. At the moment he appeared, the volcano's eruptions ceased, as if Su Ming's appearance had caused the volcano to no longer dare erupt.

In fact, the countless ferocious beasts living in the second layer started trembling and hiding at that moment. They no longer dared to show even a single bit of their presence. Su Ming's descent brought about an incredibly mighty pressure on these creatures, causing all of them to sense the shadow of death looming over them.

In just the time it takes for half an incense stick to burn, a loud bang shook the sky. As the ground trembled, a huge gap appeared in it. The next moment, a great presence

spread out from inside it, and when Su Ming sensed that presence, his eyes shrank swiftly.

The presence brought with it a will that strongly suggested that it did not belong to Harmonious Morus Alba. It was all over the place, and if Su Ming had not seen it before when he returned to the past once he cast his divine ability, it would have been difficult for him to tell that this presence... belonged to the vast and boundless universe beyond Harmonious Morus Alba.

Su Ming stared at the gap. After mulling over his thoughts for a while, he stepped into it, and when he reappeared, he was already in the so-called third layer of Old Man Extermination's tomb.

Almost at the same time Su Ming stepped in, Zi Ruo gritted her teeth and moved into the gap as well.

It was the third layer of Old Man Extermination's tomb, and it was also the final layer. It was where the Relocation Rune was located. Everything around there was indistinct, and it seemed as if no end to it could be seen. The indistinctiveness gave Su Ming an incredibly familiar feeling. It was incredibly similar to the Vast Expanse he had seen when he cast the divine ability of time.

However, there were also differences. Harmonious Morris Alba's presence was also in this vast space, which was why it was not truly a vast expanse of emptiness. Clearly, it was a connecting point linking both universes together.

This caused Su Ming to remember the murals he saw in the damaged hall when time reversed while he was in the Viridian Gods' Expanse Cosmos. The Viridian God in the past had also stepped into the Old Man Extermination's tomb and was Relocated when he in the third layer. He personally saw gap in space and Old Man Extermination coming through it from beyond the universe.

'If that is the case, then this so-called Old Man Extermination's tomb should have appeared before the Old Man Extermination arrived, so why... did Zi Ruo say that the tomb was built for Old Man Extermination.

'And there are four of them...'

Su Ming frowned and looked at Zi Ruo, who followed behind him. The woman had come with him all the way, but did not show any unusual signs. Even if she was familiar with this place, with how Su Ming had broken through the two layers, he did not need someone to lead him.

He thought that Zi Ruo was slightly slow-witted, but in truth, this woman was incredibly clever. When she saw Su Ming's gaze, she immediately knew what he was thinking and

that she had not shown her abilities along the way. If this continued, then Su Ming would not allow her to follow him any longer.

'If I want to push him down, I must let him know my abilities first.'

Zi Ruo did not wait for Su Ming to speak. With a sparkle in her eyes, she lifted her hand, formed a seal, and pointed forward. With it, an image of a fox appeared behind her. It had white fur, and the instant it appeared, it lifted its head and howled at the sky.

As it howled, a white thread appeared in front of Zi Ruo. It twisted and spread out to quickly turn into a circle. While the white fox continued howling, its tail instantly split into two, then three, four, five...

When nine tails were behind the white fox, nine threads also appeared in front of Zi Ruo. They intersected with each other and stretched out to form a Rune.

Immediately after, the Rune shrank to turn into a white ball of thread the size of a fist. Nine rays of white light shot out from within it. They spread through the area, and after a moment, when the light disappeared, the white ball of thread swelled up, and in the blink of an eye, it grew to be several dozens of feet big.

Su Ming watched the Rune appear and grow larger while absorbed in thought. The white threads that formed the Rune seemed to be part of the laws in the place. Zi Ruo's divine ability allowed the user to extract the laws of the place no matter where they were, which gave it some mysterious aspects.

"This is the divine ability we of the Heavenly Foxes are born with. Senior, please have a look."

Zi Ruo's face was slightly pale. Clearly, executing her divine ability in that place was not easy for her. As she spoke, she lifted her hand and pointed at the Rune formed by the white threads.

With it, the Rune that was several dozens of feet big immediately shuddered. When it twisted again, it turned into a picture that almost looked like it had solid form. The edges around the picture were its borders, and there was a ball of white spots in the middle. Around that ball was a layer of fog.

It was not a Rune. It was clearly the structural plan of the third layer of the tomb!

The Heavenly Fox's divine ability could allow them to make any place reveal their layout to them, and Zi Ruo was pointing at the white spot at the center of the structural plan.

The moment she did so, the structural plan was immediately enlarged. As it continued growing, the white spot at the center showed them that it... was a Rune.

“This is it,” Su Ming suddenly said.

Zi Ruo nodded. She lifted her hand and pointed at the enlarged Rune at the center. Immediately, Su Ming noticed that a Relocation power appeared around them. It instantly spread out, and with a loud bang, it devoured Su Ming and Zi Ruo’s figures.

When Su Ming appeared again, there was an ancient and old Rune under his feet. Zi Ruo was beside him. Her face had become even paler. It could be said that she was completely in control of the third layer. She had first cast her people’s divine ability and drew a simulation of the structural plan. Then, she had Relocated Su Ming where he wanted to be. This sort of Art that allowed its user to Relocate to any place they wanted in any Expanse Cosmos was something that even Su Ming did not see often.

He nodded towards Zi Ruo, and once a hint of admiration appeared on his face, he lowered his head to observe the old Rune beneath his feet. He did not know that once Zi Ruo noticed the admiration on his face, her spirits were immediately lifted.

That feeling was similar to eating a medicinal core that would provide her with great supplements. Zi Ruo’s heart filled with excitement, as if obtaining Su Ming’s admiration was the first step to success.

‘Sooner or later, I will definitely push you down!’ Zi Ruo swore in her heart while clenching her fists. She had already sworn this oath in her heart plenty of times during the journey, and it allowed her determination to grow stronger.

When Zi Ruo saw that Su Ming was observing the Rune beneath his feet, she cast a glance at it before she spoke gently. “This is a long-distance Relocation Rune. It should have been around for at least tens of thousands of years.”

“You know about Runes?” Su Ming lifted his head and cast a glance at Zi Ruo.

“Just a bit.” Zi Ruo might have said those words, but there was a hint of confidence on her face, causing Su Ming to think that while this woman was slightly slow in the head, she had some aspects about her that were adorable.

“Tell me about it.”

Su Ming looked at Zi Ruo. He would willingly admit that he did not know much about Runes, and his knowledge could never compare to that of Hu Zi. The woman before him also seemed confident, as if she was certain of her knowledge.

“There are plenty of categories to Runes. Relocation Runes are a rather unique type, but no matter what sort of Relocation Rune they are, their only use is to Relocate.” When Zi Ruo spoke of Runes, the confident look that appeared on her face caused her beauty to increase by several times.

“Since it is for Relocation, unless there is no fixed destination, there is definitely another point connected to this place. When the two points are connected together, they will form a path.

“These Runes are split into one-way or two-way Relocations. We can tell based on the structure of the Rune, no matter how complicated they are. They are only complicated to hide the direction of the Relocation and whether it allows a two-way Relocation.

“Look at this Rune. It might be old and complicated, but in truth, based on the loops, we can tell that this is a two-way Relocation Rune! Look at the structure of the Rune. The person who set it up in the past had unwittingly exposed what the Rune was for by trying to cover the truth with lots of complicated and unnecessary patterns. In truth... the distance of the Relocation should be... Huh?”

Zi Ruo spoke while observing the Rune, then she suddenly came to a halt.

The more Zi Ruo observed the Rune, the more she frowned. She then began to mumble under her breath. “This is an Interface Rune! This Relocation Rune will send the person to another world. This is... strange. This world doesn’t belong to Dark Dawn, Saint Defier, or Arid Triad...”

A glint appeared in Su Ming’s eyes. “Activate the Rune. When we are Relocated, we will know where it leads to.”

Zi Ruo nodded. With Su Ming beside her, even if they did run into any danger, she was confident that he could resolve it.

She immediately lifted her right hand, and the nine-tailed white fox appeared behind her. When she pushed her right hand on the Rune, the nine-tailed white fox turned into nine rays of white light that instantly fused into it.

The Rune rumbled. Powerful light instantly filled the air, covering up Su Ming and Zi Ruo’s figures. After a moment, when the light grew dimmer and everything returned to normal, the Rune remained in place, but Su Ming and Zi Ruo, who were originally standing inside it, were already gone.

.....

“Has he arrived?”

A low murmur could be heard from the hidden ancient ship near the gap leading to the Vast Expanse beyond.

Chapter 1324: Imitation of Yin Death’s Path

The Relocation seemed to take an incredibly long time. It was so long that a wave of fatigue would rise in people's hearts, but at the same time, they would feel as if only a short time had passed. Their vision seemed to have just turned dark for a moment, and when it cleared, all the feelings were gone.

When the conflicted emotions rose in Su Ming's heart, he could not describe them clearly. It felt as if a long time had passed, but also as if only a short moment had gone by. He could not help feeling that his mind was in a mess.

It was just like how a normal cultivator would feel after they woke up from meditation or when a mortal woke up from a deep sleep. To them, that moment had only lasted an instant, but in truth, an entire night or an even longer stretch of time had passed.

As the world before Su Ming became clearer, his eyes sparkled. What revealed itself before him was not the fourth Expanse Cosmos in Harmonious Morus Alba's wings, which he had expected, but a semi-transparent layer of haziness!

It made it seem as if the world was covered in a veil, causing everything to become blurry. Su Ming also sensed that his body seemed to be unable to move. As his eyes sparkled, he observed the hazy, semi-transparent layer before him. He saw a huge tunnel beyond that haziness. It seemed to have no end, stretching far into the distance.

The walls seemed to be made of flesh and blood. They looked like a membrane, but possessed life. It... was a living tunnel!

And Su Ming was at the top of the tunnel. He was in a... thin cocoon... that was about thirty feet big!

It seemed to be frozen on the wall of a tunnel. It had not formed for long, which was why it was in a semi-transparent state. Those from the outside could clearly see Su Ming inside. But when he looked out from within, he could only see haziness.

When he swept his gaze across the area, Su Ming saw that Zi Ruo was fixed in another cocoon about ten feet tall on a wall of flesh not too far away from him. At that moment, her eyes were shut, and she was unconscious.

'The Relocation Rune actually sent us here?'

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. The Relocation might have been strange and the place might terrify people, but to Su Ming, there was no place that he could not go or was forbidden to go.

The cocoon might have stuck Su Ming's body to the tunnel of flesh, but when the chilling glare shone in his eyes, he moved slightly, and cracking sounds immediately

rang out around him. Cracks immediately appeared on the cocoon around him. It shattered inch by inch.

Su Ming walked out of the shattered cocoon and stood in the tunnel. He cast a cold glance at the area around him and spread his divine sense outwards, his expression gradually changing.

Everything around him had appeared indistinct when he was in the cocoon. When he walked out of it and looked around him again, everything became incredibly clear, and he could tell... that there were thousands of huge cocoons in the tunnel that resembled a wall of flesh!

The smaller cocoons were one hundred something feet tall, and the bigger ones were thousands of feet tall. They had varying heights, but were all stuck to the wall of flesh like goosebumps and boils, which would send a chill crawling down anyone's spines despite it not being cold.

There was a person in each cocoon, but when Su Ming looked at them, he found that they were all mummies. Their flesh, blood, and essence had been sucked dry by the wall of flesh. It seemed like the tunnel had been able to last for so long because it had continuously absorbed the essence from the formerly living people.

Su Ming could sense something strange from the corpses in the cocoons. He could not quite describe what this feeling was. It was as if there was a thin sheet of paper separating him from the answer, but before he tore it down, it would be impossible for him to know the world behind that paper.

A cold glare shone in his eyes. He lifted his right hand and seized the air in the direction of the cocoon holding Zi Ruo. Cracking sounds immediately echoed in the air. An invisible hand manifested to grab the cocoon, and Su Ming pulled it towards him, yanking it straight off the wall of flesh.

With a gentle squeeze, a crack rang out. The cocoon shattered to ash to reveal Zi Ruo, who had her eyes closed and was unconscious. Her face was pale, and she gave off a frail air. It was as if some of her essence had been absorbed during the period of time she was in the cocoon.

Su Ming lifted his right hand and tapped the center of Zi Ruo's crown gently. She immediately shuddered. When she opened her eyes, a look of confusion flashed through them, but it only lasted for an instant before her gaze returned to normal. She looked around her swiftly, and her expression gradually grew a little sullen. Clearly, she had already noticed the reason as to why her body felt weak.

"This place is..." Zi Ruo hesitated for a moment. When she swept her gaze across the cocoons, a feeling that the place was incredibly strange rose in her heart.

“You’ll know if you observe.”

Su Ming cast a glance at the area around him. The strange feeling kept on growing stronger.

As he spoke, he charged down the tunnel. Zi Ruo quickly followed behind him. The next instant, Su Ming’s heart suddenly trembled!

For some unknown reason, he was reminded of Yin Death Vortex!

When he was there, he had charged down continuously as well, just like what he was doing right then. When he reached the end, he moved from Arid Triad to Harmonious Morus Alba!

And at that moment, the tunnel reminded Su Ming of that time. When the memory rose in his head, he could no longer stop it. The idea practically fused with the strange feeling he had in his heart earlier, causing Su Ming to come to a halt. He no longer descended. Instead, his expression changed while his mind analyzed all possible outcomes.

‘Yin Death Vortex might be a vortex, but in truth, it is also a tunnel. Its structure was a vortex, while the structure of this place is something akin to a tunnel of flesh and blood.

‘There are multiple worlds in Yin Death Vortex, and there are multiple cocoons looking like boils on the tunnel of flesh...’

While Su Ming pondered over his thoughts, he suddenly moved and appeared beside a huge cocoon. When he brought his right hand up, he pierced through the cocoon to touch the spot between the corpse’s eyebrows.

After some time, Su Ming pulled back his right hand. There was a faint wisp of green smoke drifting about his fingertips, but it soon disappeared without a trace. However, Su Ming could sense a familiar presence from the faint green smoke!

It was... Yin Death Aura!

It was a presence from Yin Death Vortex. It might have some other presences, but they came from the mummy, who was of an unknown race to Su Ming, but no matter what, each of the foreign races had one similarity—all of them had Yin Death Aura!

It was Yin Death Aura... the same aura that was present in the lives of all races in all the worlds within Yin Death Vortex! Regardless of whether it was the Berserkers or the other races, all of them had it.

As Su Ming watched his finger—now without any aura drifting around it—his pupils shrank slightly. With one move, he appeared beside another cocoon. With the same

movement as before, he pierced the cocoon. His finger reached inside and pressed down on the center of the corpse's brow, which had died many years ago and whose flesh, blood, and essence had been sucked dry.

When he pulled his finger back, a faint green aura circled his fingers. The faint Yin Death Aura was the same as before, and Su Ming's expression grew darker. His narrowed eyes showed a hint of killing intent and a chilling glare.

Zi Ruo had witnessed all of it. She might not know what connection the faint green smoke had with Su Ming, but with her intellect, she could see the killing intent on his with just one glance. It was stronger than anything she had seen from him so far.

It looked like all those who were unlucky enough to step on the wrong foot when it came to dealing with the current Su Ming would have to suffer an unimaginable wrath which had the might of a storm.

"Yin Death Aura," Su Ming mumbled.

He moved a total of seven times, and each time, he would appear beside a cocoon before he extended a finger into it and took it away moments later. He performed this test repeatedly, and every single time, he saw the faint green smoke that contained Yin Death Aura. This allowed Su Ming to understand why he had sensed that strange feeling when he just came over.

All the lives in the cocoons in the tunnel of flesh... were from Yin Death Vortex. It looked like... the tunnel of flesh could only absorb the lives of those from Yin Death Vortex!

When Su Ming cast a glance at the tunnel, he found that his initial guess that there were only thousands of cocoons in the tunnel was still a gross underestimation. There were not just thousands... There were clearly nearly one hundred thousand of them!

There was no end to them. The tunnel was covered in cocoon after cocoon, and within them were all cultivators from Yin Death Vortex. Their lives, their flesh and blood, and their everything had become a part that would allow the tunnel of flesh to grow!

A red glare appeared in Su Ming's eyes. It symbolized murderous intent and anger. At that moment, if he still did not understand the use of the tunnel, he would have wasted living for so many years!

Someone had clearly created a Yin Death Tunnel by intentionally imitating Yin Death Vortex!

There was only one use for it—to imitate Yin Death Vortex's ability of connecting Harmonious Morus Alba and Arid Triad. It could connect Dark Dawn and Saint Defier's universe to that so-called... fourth universe!

Su Ming could not think of any other function besides this, and he was incredibly certain that the tunnel had been created for this purpose.

To create it, the architect needed the flesh, blood, and souls of the cultivators from Yin Death Vortex because of how unique their world was. They would also need quite a large number of them for it to be successful.

Besides Old Man Extermination, Su Ming could not think of another person who had so many resources on hand!

Once he understood it and looked at the corpses as well as the cocoons again, Su Ming shuddered. He did not want to find his Master Tian Xie Zi nor the First God of Berserkers Lie Shan Xiu among the corpses...

Chapter 1325: Dazed Eyes

'Something's not right!'

Su Ming's eyes shone. When he swept his gaze past the cocoon, a hint of uncertainty suddenly rose in his heart. If the cultivators in the cocoons on the tunnel all came from Yin Death Vortex... then what about Zi Ruo?

When she was Relocated, she was also bound in a cocoon. By the looks of it, she some of her life force had also been absorbed.

Su Ming turned his head to the side and cast a glance at Zi Ruo. He did not voice the question in his heart, but when he looked at her, he found that her face was pale. She was looking around herself, and there was a dazed look in her eyes.

With Su Ming's experience, no matter how cunning and conniving a person was, he could still see certain clues as to what they were thinking. But Su Ming had not been able to see Zi Ruo harboring any sort of blatant plots against him. She might be scheming something, but she had not overstepped her boundaries all the way to the tunnel.

Most importantly, Su Ming had not detected any sort of danger from her. With his level of cultivation and how strong his will was, he could sense if there was any danger coming from the people beside him. This was similar to instinct, but his senses had already surpassed that basic level.

Su Ming could clearly sense that while Zi Ruo was scheming something, she did not have any ill-intention to harm his life, but it was precisely because of this Su Ming

frowned. After contemplating it for a moment, he suppressed his thoughts. He then charged into the depths of the tunnel. Wherever he went, he would spread his will and have it fuse with each cocoon to search whether there were any familiar figures.

He wanted to find his Master and to get to the fourth universe to see the gap. He also wanted to find signs of the Old Man Extermination. Compared to all that, Su Ming did not want to spend too much thought on other trivial matters.

In his eyes, Zi Ruo's schemes were most probably for her people. She was not specifically targeting him, or else it would have been impossible for him to not notice anything.

Besides, if Zi Ruo truly had some undue schemes, then with his personality, Su Ming would first watch her perform with an aloof heart, and once she finished her performance, he would destroy her.

Zi Ruo felt a little complicated in her heart. Those complicated feelings were because of a dream she had when she lost consciousness when the cocoon bound her. It was a dream that caused her heart to race.

Once she woke up when Su Ming yanked her out of the cocoon, she could clearly sense that a part of her life force had been absorbed... and besides her life force... a bit of her inborn ability of a Heavenly Fox was also absorbed.

In fact, she could sense that when she was dreaming, the methods she wanted set up in Heavenly Fox Tribe had been perfectly carried out by her people.

'We of the Heavenly Foxes have observed this Old Man Extermination's tomb for many years. In truth... the tunnel here has already been thoroughly investigated by our people many years ago, but this has always been the greatest secret among our people. No outsider knows about this, and even among our people, only a few are privy to this knowledge...

'The flesh tunnel here repels other presences, but over the years, we constantly rearranged the layout and even buried quite a number of our people's corpses in it. With this method, we fused with this tunnel, making it so... that we can partially control it... The flesh tunnel can absorb our people's inborn abilities... but when we release our inborn ability here, our power will be even stronger...'

Zi Ruo cast a look at Su Ming before her, then gritted her teeth. Women were the majority among the Heavenly Foxes, but it was rather difficult for them to increase their population.

Once an ancestor of theirs explored the flesh tunnel, she thought of a method to use it to absorb the Heavenly Foxes' inborn ability by using the power in the tunnel that allowed it to absorb life force. When a large number of Heavenly Foxes were sent to

fuse with the tunnel, on a certain degree, a form of connection was formed between the Heavenly Foxes and the flesh tunnel.

After all, one of the Heavenly Foxes' inborn divine abilities was fusion. They could fuse with everything in the universe, which was similar to Su Ming's Possession, but it was much gentler than it. The effect might not be perfect, but if it was executed by the entire race, as time passed, they could fuse with something without anyone noticing anything.

This was something that even the Old Man Extermination did not expect. After all, no matter how strong his power was, it was impossible for him to pay attention to all trivial matters. The black-robed people had also not noticed the little tricks the Heavenly Foxes had pulled over the years.

Because of that, when the Heavenly Foxes fused with the tunnel over the years, they could use it when they needed it. They could activate the arrangements they left in the tunnel with a method akin to offering sacrifices from the outside world, which would make it release an aphrodisiac aura in a barely discernible manner.

Due to the tunnel being sealed, that aura would become thicker as time went by, and once it reached a certain degree, it would cause the men and women from the Heavenly Foxes to unleash their passion. They would then be in a state of intense passion in the sealed environment for months or even years. With this, the problems of reproduction the race suffered were solved to a certain degree.

That was why Zi Ruo had come and allowed herself to be bound by the cocoon while having her life force absorbed like the other cultivators from Yin Death Vortex.

Even if Su Ming did not save her, once a certain amount of her life force had been sucked away, she would have woken up.

At that moment, almost all the Heavenly Foxes on the various cultivation planets in the Heavenly Foxes' Expanse Cosmos surrounded and danced around a huge statue of a nine-tailed white fox on their cultivation planets.

Their dance was filled with extremely alluring movements, and when they surrounded the statue, moaning sounds could be heard in the air. They were extremely pleasant to the ears and sounded like pants, but if anyone listened to them closely, they would have the misconception they reminded them of incantations.

This happened in all 739 planets of Heavenly Foxes Expanse Cosmos. All the women of the Heavenly Foxes started dancing faster, and gradually, as sweat covered their bodies, waves of pleasant fragrance spread out. Pink light appeared on each of the women, causing the 739 planets to slowly turn pink. The pink galaxy of the Heavenly Foxes' Expanse Cosmos became even more dazzling.

An aphrodisiac aura that could make a person lose their consciousness and go mad appeared, and it grew thicker.

All of the Heavenly Foxes' Expanse Cosmos filled with an amorous air. It also affected the Old Man Extermination's tomb. Zi Ruo's eyes soon began to shift between clarity and dazedness.

Pink spots appeared on her body beneath her clothes. They were packed densely together, and there were a total of 739 of them, corresponding to the 739 nine-tailed statues surrounded by countless Heavenly Foxes as they danced on the 739 planets.

Those statues were continuously absorbing the aura from the Heavenly Foxes, and with a unique method, it gathered on Zi Ruo, causing her skin to slowly stop being pale. Instead, as the 739 pink spots spread out, they slowly fused with each other, causing her skin to turn pink.

At the same time, the aphrodisiac aura belonging to the Heavenly Foxes gradually increased in amount in the flesh tunnel. In the beginning, it was incredibly faint, almost unnoticeable, but once it became obvious, it meant that the aura had grown to an incredible denseness.

Su Ming moved very quickly. His will swept past each cocoon as he charged forward into the depths of the tunnel. He did not find Tian Xie Zi, but gradually, as he charged forward, Su Ming felt that his breathing was slowly quickening, and his heart started racing.

At the instant he noticed it, a hint of red appeared on Su Ming's cheeks, and a rare, vacant look covered his eyes. It only lasted for an instant before it immediately disappeared, and clarity showed up in Su Ming's gaze once more.

But his expression grew a little darker. This was not the first time he had experienced the racing of his heart. Many years ago, when Su Ming was still in the land of Berserkers, he had experienced it in an event that was incredibly difficult for him to forget.

It was when he had to fight against Madam Ji...

He had been affected by her poison. To the current Su Ming, it was insignificant, but in the past, it was so strong that it could instantly cause his thoughts to scatter due to lust.

Right then, Su Ming felt exactly the way he did when he was affected by the poison. A large number of jumbled up pictures flashed through his mind.

A glint appeared in his eyes. When he turned his head around, he saw that Zi Ruo had a dazed and vacant look. Her body was trembling, and sweat beaded on her skin.

Her exposed skin had already turned pink, and Su Ming saw terror on her face.

Zi Ruo was terrified, because based on her plan, the aura should not have such a great effect on her. After all, she was a Heavenly Fox. The one who should be affected the greatest should have been Su Ming.

Yet at that moment, she found that the aura was slightly out of her control. In fact, her mind was being corroded by it, and she was starting to get confused.

‘How can this be?! No wonder I couldn’t sense any sort of danger from her even though I could feel that she was scheming against me...’

Su Ming frowned. The strange aura was the exact same as he felt from the Heavenly Foxes’ Expanse Cosmos. However, the density far surpassed what he had sensed in the outside world.

Su Ming let out a cold harrumph and swung his arm. A cold gust immediately appeared out of nowhere, and when it swept out, Su Ming’s speed instantly increased. At the instant he charged away, the aphrodisiac aura that could make a person lose their consciousness grew even denser, and the tunnel was instantly shrouded in a pink haze.

The people in the cocoons on the flesh tunnel suddenly started shuddering. As cracking sounds rang out, the corpses instantly had their last traces of flesh and blood sucked out of their bodies. Then, they were reduced to powder.

.....

“Hmm?”

An old voice tinted with a hint of surprise rang out in the space beside the gap to the universe beyond. An invisible figure seemed to be somewhere in space. It lifted his head and cast its eyes into the distance.

“Has he finally noticed? Looks like Arid Triad hasn’t completely assimilated with this place...”

Chapter 1326: Plot for Murder

At the instant the corpses were reduced to powder, even more fog instantly filled the flesh tunnel. There was an element in that fog that served as an aphrodisiac. If a normal person took even a small whiff of it, their bodies would immediately tremble, and the lust that would erupt from their bodies would burn their souls until they died.

An aura of this level was no longer an aphrodisiac, but a poison that could corrode all beings!

Even Zi Ruo had not expected things to turn out this way. Despite being in Avacaniya Realm, she could only struggle at that moment. The length of time she spent dazed gradually surpassed the amount of time her head was clear.

But that was not all. She had fallen into her own trap, but her people were still dancing in the world outside and releasing more of their inborn abilities, causing the aura in the flesh tunnel to become even thicker.

When the fog around Zi Ruo concealed her entirely, a moan that would stir up the soul and all the lust residing in the depths of a person's body... resounded through the flesh tunnel.

That sound was indescribably enchanting, and it contained a tempting note to it that caused those who heard it to feel thirsty. They would also feel a desire they could not put to words boiling in them, and it would make them want to search for a companion so the lustful passion could erupt from their bodies.

When that sound tumbled out of Zi Ruo's lips, a bang shot up in her head. She could no longer fight against the fog and lost her mind, but there was still a slight struggle left in her being. However, there was no longer any clarity in her eyes. The vacant look had become even more prominent, and her body was flushed pink. She had ripped off her own clothes at some point in time, and her barely discernible figure in the fog could tempt all lives in the universe.

Even those in Avanicaya Realm would find it hard to keep their minds clear in the poison that stirs up the most primal lust.

Zi Ruo's body grew even more flushed. As the sounds of her pants echoed in the air, her body moved based on instinct to search for Su Ming. She turned into a long arc and charged forward.

She had to search for him. Even though she had lost her consciousness, the hint of clarity remaining in the depths of her mind turned into an instinct that told her that if she could not find Su Ming and return to normal from her aroused state... then she would be burned alive by the fire in her body. Even if she was not burned alive, once she was controlled by the poisonous lust for a long period of time and could not neutralize it, then...

She would turn into a puppet without consciousness that only knew lust. Once she left the flesh tunnel in that state, it would be the greatest tragedy in her life. In fact, she would become the greatest tragedy for all of Dark Dawn as well...

Zi Ruo did not want that to happen. Even if she died, she did not want that to happen... but she had already lost her mind. Before the last bit of awareness remaining in her mind was destroyed, a tear rolled down her cheek.

However, it instantly turned into vapor... No one but her could see it.

It was the final tear from her. When it disappeared, Zi Ruo lost all her consciousness and turned into a body controlled by lust, a female beast whose soul was controlled by her desires!

Her beautiful body shot through the fog in search for a life who could release the poisonous lust in her body. At that moment, no matter who she found... she would do everything regardless of the cost to present her beauty before them.

Perhaps it was a tragedy... but if she had not been persistent about her desires, she would not have ended up in such a situation.

As Zi Ruo moved through the fog, Su Ming charged downwards like lightning. A gust of cold wind stirred up around him. It could not blow away the fog that filled the flesh tunnel, but it continuously blew against Su Ming so that his mind could remain clear.

His eyes were slightly red, but his mind was very clear. He did not appear to be too affected. At that moment, Su Ming had already guessed that Zi Ruo was the main reason behind the abnormality that had occurred in the flesh tunnel.

However, with his intelligence, he soon deduced that even if she was a powerful warrior in Avacaniya Realm, it was impossible for her to create a poisonous aphrodisiac that could affect Su Ming.

There was definitely a hidden manipulator in this, and it was this person... who magnified the effects of the life-affecting poison so that it could affect Su Ming.

And based on Su Ming's deductions, aside from that so-called Old Man Extermination, the only other person who could do it... was Arid Triad!

After all, regardless of whether it was Dark Dawn or Saint Defier, both belonged to Arid Triad, which was why he had the right to set up this plot quietly without Su Ming noticing it.

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. He had met Arid Triad before. That person had the power to Possess Harmonious Morus Alba, so he would probably not use such a method if he wanted to kill Su Ming.

'There should be a third party involved in this!'

Su Ming's eyes shone. He could sense that the poisonous aphrodisiac had become stronger, but he was still very far away from the end of the flesh tunnel.

As a freezing glare appeared in Su Ming's eyes, he let out a cold harrumph, and he came to a swift halt. He lifted his right hand and seized the air in the direction of the flesh tunnel beside him.

With it, the area around him roared. The entire flesh tunnel shuddered, and a huge palm manifested before Su Ming. The instant it touched the flesh tunnel, it was blocked by a gentle power residing within it. Amid the booming sounds that shot up, the palm Su Ming had brought up disappeared.

'Arid Triad!'

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. The gentle power spreading out of the flesh tunnel belonged to Arid Triad!

The instant the palm Su Ming had formed disappeared, an even greater poisonous aphrodisiac was released from the flesh tunnel. With dashes of pink in it, the fog instantly covered Su Ming's field of vision. He fell silent. He stood there and did not move, but instead let out a soft sigh.

"Do you want to destroy me so much? Even if we made a promise to wait for one hundred years, you still chose to attack me when you believed you had the chance..."

"This place is not connected to the sky, and neither is it connected to earth. This isn't space, and neither is it the galaxy. There is no entrance, so it is also difficult to find its exit..."

"You must have sealed it off completely. This is a place specifically targeted to killing me."

As Su Ming sighed, he shook his head. He knew that he had been careless. Ever since he came to Dark Dawn's camp, he had been confused by the black-robed young man who had devoured a butterfly and the fact that Old Man Extermination was still alive and had come from the Vast Expanse beyond, which was why he had been careless in regards to Arid Triad.

"You control Dark Dawn and Saint Defier, so you should know where this tunnel leads to, and you should also know... that Old Man Extermination came from the Vast Expanse beyond!"

"Then do you know that there is a young man in black within the Vast Expanse who specifically devours Harmonious Morus Albas?!"

Su Ming swung his arm, and the haziness around him instantly disintegrated. At the same time, a young man with a gentle look appeared on the walls of flesh on the tunnel. He was dressed in white. His body was an illusion, and he appeared in the haziness.

He might be quite different from the person under the tree, but this presence and will told Su Ming that this was Arid Triad.

"I do not know of the black-robed young man you speak of... and neither do I want to know about him. As for that so-called Old Man Extermination, I have observed him before. He is indeed from the Vast Expanse beyond, but he won't be able to do anything.

"To me... you are the one who poses the greatest threat to me."

When the young man spoke, his eyes flashed. The world immediately roared, and at an indescribable speed, the poisonous aphrodisiac in the flesh tunnel became even more dense.

"As long as you are one of the living beings in the world, you cannot escape from the seven emotions and six desires. Even if you don't have them, you have the instinctual desire to reproduce. Our wills exist on the same plane of existence... but I no longer have a physical body. I only have a will left... and since you cannot discard your physical body, you have a weakness.

"This weakness is your desire. I will use it to destroy your life, and when you lose your consciousness, you will lose your will. Without your will, you will be unable to fight against me, and I will only need one thought... to kill you."

Arid Triad's voice echoed in the air with a tone that brook no argument. When it reached Su Ming's ears, he stared at the spot where Arid Triad's illusory body was covered by the fog. In silence, he shook his head.

Clearly, Arid Triad did not care about the black-robed young man or Old Man Extermination. Other people would think that Arid Triad's indifference towards them was due to his confidence and because he knew things that only he was privy to, which was why he could ignore them.

However... Su Ming was the same type of existence as Arid Triad. At that moment, he could sense... that Arid Triad did indeed not know of the black-robed young man's existence, or rather, he had some clues about it, but was too conceited to pay them any heed, and he also underestimated Old Man Extermination.

"Honestly... the two of us did not have to be enemies."

Su Ming sighed softly, and a hint of killing intent appeared in his eyes. He took a few steps back, brought his right hand up, and swung his arm forward.

With that one swing, his will erupted from him. It formed a huge vortex, and it rotated, Su Ming let out a cold harrumph.

“I wonder if a third party is involved in this plot of yours with which you want to ensure my death. I’m very curious. If there is truly a third party involved, I truly want to see... who is it that keeps me in their minds so much!”

Su Ming smiled coldly. He brought his right hand forward and formed a seal, then pointed at the spot between his eyebrows. With it, the slit formed by his third eye at the center of his brow began to open.

The dark light within it grew to a dazzling degree until the third eye completely opened, revealing the pupil inside.

The vortex before Su Ming rotated, sweeping up the poisonous aphrodisiac around him into the distance with booming sounds. Su Ming’s third eye sparkled at the center of his brow, and the entire world was magnified endlessly within it.

Chapter 1327: Love Menace

The hazy, poisonous aphrodisiac in front of Su Ming was enlarged endlessly. At the same time, the rotating vortex also touched the wall of the flesh tunnel. When the two came into contact, the gentle power that had appeared previously appeared once more, causing Su Ming’s vortex to instantly crumble, but the wall shrank inward as well.

At the instant it shrank, the body of the young man dissipated slightly, but Arid Triad quickly gathered himself together. However, during the moment between his body dissipating and gathering together, Su Ming magnified it with his third eye several millions of times.

He saw that there were countless glowing spots in Arid Triad’s manifested body, and a universe contained in the glowing spot at the center of his brow.

He also saw a galaxy in that universe. It was soon magnified until Su Ming saw a cultivation planet. There were three altars on it.

They were positioned in the three points of a perpendicular triangle. A person was sitting on each altar; two men and one woman. The woman was dressed in white. She was sitting cross-legged and was forming seals with her hands. The middle-aged man on the altar directly across from her did the same thing, and the two of them seemed to be using all their power to help... the old man on the third altar.

The old man was dressed in a long robe, and his hair was a mess. There was blood at the corners of his mouth. He had his right hand pressed on a shattered bone, and in his left hand he held a small pink bottle. It had a strand of hair submerged in the pink liquid. The old man was mumbling, as if he was chanting, and the air around him distorted.

The presence of those in Avacaniya Realm was thick on the three of them, making it clear that they were three powerful warriors in Avacaniya Realm. Su Ming had never met them before... but the moment he saw the woman, he immediately sensed a familiar presence from her.

It had once resided in his ring, which was a telling sign that the woman was the previous owner of the supreme treasure. With that being the case, her status was obvious to Su Ming.

‘Saint Defier’s three cultivators in Avacaniya Realm!’

Killing intent appeared in Su Ming’s third eye. It was as he had expected, there was a third party involved in the plot to murder him. Once he saw everything, he came to a complete understanding of what was going on.

He also sensed a hint of Arid Triad’s presence on the shattered bone the old man held in his hand. The strand of hair in the small bottle filled with pink liquid, of course, belonged to Su Ming!

When he saw all of that with his third eye, the old man opened his eyes, and resolve appeared on his face. He squeezed the small bottle in his left hand, and the bottle immediately shattered. The strand of hair and the pink liquid landed on the shattered bone, which immediately absorbed them. Even the hair was branded deeply into it, as if it had become a part of the bone’s marks.

‘A Curse, huh?’

Su Ming swiftly closed his third eye. The world before him disappeared, and what appeared before Su Ming’s eyes again was the fog in the flesh tunnel.

The poisonous aphrodisiac already filled the entire area. It covered his eyes, and a pink shade even appeared on Su Ming’s body. His mind might have still been clear, but his heart had sped up. The circulation of his Qi and blood was also much faster than usual.

In fact... red had appeared in Su Ming’s eyes. Blood capillaries filled the whites of his eyes. It revealed how he was oppressing his lust, but even more so what strong killing intent he harbored in his heart. However, there was a hint of concern contained in that killing intent as well.

Su Ming could not think of a way to resolve the plot against him, but if he let time pass, he knew exactly what would await him.

Moving back, he raised his right hand, and Harmonious Morus Alba's illusory shadow appeared behind him. It was the manifestation of his will. When he pointed forward, the shadow of Harmonious Morus Alba with his will gathered on it immediately flew forward. With a loud bang, it charged at the fog. Once it shot passed it, it crashed into the flesh tunnel.

However... with Arid Triad's will around, Su Ming's will was eventually neutralized.

His eyes became even more bloodshot. He lifted his hands and formed a seal, then the wills of Morning Dao, Immortal Sect, Sky Hill, and the Emperor of Abyss' True World instantly descended once more. At the same time, he threw his head back and roared. When he extended his right hand, the souls of Great Berserkers came charging out. When they gathered on him, his right arm instantly grew larger.

It was followed by his left arm, torso, and legs. In an instant, Su Ming completed the God of Berserkers Transformation. With its power and the four wills surrounding him, Su Ming turned into a long arc that flew forth with a bang, shooting through the fog at the nearest wall of the flesh tunnel.

The moment Su Ming approached, the young man formed by Arid Triad instantly appeared on the wall. He lifted his right hand and pushed towards the incoming Su Ming with a grim expression on his face.

The two of them crashed into each other. When Su Ming's and the young man's hands touched, the entire flesh tunnel trembled furiously. Ripples swept through the area. The young man's figure dissipated, but once Su Ming coughed up a mouthful of blood, his body fell back as well.

He was instantly forced out of his God of Berserkers Transformation state due to the rebound. When his body returned to normal, the four great wills around him disintegrated as well before they gathered on him again. Su Ming came to a stop and wiped off the blood at the corners of his mouth. He stared at the fog around him falling backwards to reveal the young man formed by Arid Triad on the walls of the flesh tunnel, who had manifested once more, but who was now slightly indistinct.

"It's useless. All your resistance... is useless. The more you struggle, the faster the poisonous aphrodisiac will take effect," the young man formed by Arid Triad said faintly.

Su Ming cast a cold look at him and moved back. Arid Triad's will existed everywhere in the flesh tunnel, so it was difficult for Su Ming to break it. As he moved back, a myriad of thoughts ran through his mind.

'If Arid Triad's descent is the tree, then the roots are Saint Defiers' cultivators in Avacaniya Realm. They're working together. One of them sealed the paths in this place and changed the Heavenly Foxes' inborn talents, and the other is Cursing me!

'That shattered bone belongs to Arid Triad, and that hair belongs to me. That pink liquid is clearly the one that created this hazy, poisonous aphrodisiac. They aren't thinking of killing me. Arid Triad... is thinking of devouring me!

'They definitely have plenty of other preparations in hand to make sure that this plan can be carried out perfectly no matter what I do...'

As Su Ming rushed backwards, the pink fog around him tumbled and surged to fill the area around him.

'If I want to get out of this situation, I shouldn't place my emphasis on Arid Triad, but the three people from Saint Defier... As long as I get rid of them, there will be a way for me to break out of this situation. Arid Triad's devouration cannot be complete. He was worried about the disaster's descent in the past when he fought against me, so it must still be the same!

'I need a chance to get rid of those three people from Saint Defier!

'But right now, everything in this place has been sealed. I cannot spread my will outwards, so it's impossible for me to reach the three people from Saint Defier... What can I do to indirectly make them stop Cursing me?'

Su Ming continued moving back. As he stared at the pink fog tumbling about, he sensed a primitive urge slowly rise in his body. The moment it appeared, it started interfering with his mind.

The fog around him became even thicker and covered the entire area as it surged continuously towards Su Ming. In fact, the fog around him had already concealed his body.

'There's another method, and that is for me to use the power of the butterfly's wing fragment. I can force my way out of this place. I can ensure success with this method... but if I leave in this condition, even if I flee from the flesh tunnel, I won't be able to avoid being devoured by Arid Triad... The wing fragment should only be used at the most crucial moments for it to critically effective!'

Su Ming's mind gradually became muddled. This was something that had never happened his will had reached perfection. Yet at that moment, as Arid Triad's will interfered with him and the three people from Saint Defier schemed against him, Su Ming was faced with such a situation

He could already sense that Arid Triad had already opened his mouth and bared his fangs behind the fog. He was only waiting for Su Ming's mind to scatter before he would immediately devour him.

'Once my mind scatters, my will will also dissipate. At that time, Arid Triad will not worry about me fighting back when he devours me. He won't have to worry about backlash either, which would affect his plan of making the disaster descend several hundred years later to search for Harmonious Morus Alba. Oh well, no matter what, if I have no other choices, then I can only use the wing fragment to buy some time...

'Hmm?' When Su Ming moved back and was about to act, a brilliant glint suddenly shone in his eyes.

'Backlash... Backlash... That's right, backlash, that's what I need. I need to make those three people in Saint Defier suffer a backlash from their Curse. Once they face a backlash they cannot endure, they would get injured, and I would be able to get myself out of this situation!

'And if I want to make them suffer the greatest backlash, I should not bother with trying to make them unable to Curse me... but to make them suffer my Curse while they are Cursing me!'

Su Ming's eyes flashed. He was someone who would not change his mind easily after making his decision. The instant the fog around him tumbled over again, Su Ming bit the tip of his tongue and coughed up a mouthful of blood. He lifted his left hand and grabbed that blood. With a squeeze, the blood immediately turned into fog that enveloped the area in front of him.

At the same time, Su Ming swung his right hand, and the ring immediately flew out. But it was not the time for him to feel pain for losing his Enchanted Treasures. The treasure was connected to one of the Lords in Saint Defier. Su Ming might have wiped off that connection, but he had the Art of Time at his disposal.

He pointed with his right hand, and the power of time gathered on the ring to make time reverse so that it would return to the past... when it still belonged to Fei Hua.

All of this might have seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, it had only lasted for an instant. The moment Fei Hua's presence spread out from the ring, Su Ming pointed at the ring with his left hand.

"Arid Curse!"

With the power to Curse Arid Triad, he would Curse one of the Lords of Saint Defier, then with the connection her soul had with the other two Lords, he would Curse the other two as well!

Chapter 1328: Battle Against Arid Triad

Su Ming's Arid Curse came from the land of Berserkers, and his epiphany of it came from Ugly Little Thing's father, a man who was clearly a mortal, but had been able to create extraordinary blessings. Su Ming had also obtained the ring that symbolized the Curse from Madam Ji's body. When he merged all of these together, his understanding of the Curse became incredibly great.

It was especially so when his change of heart had been resolved by a doll he weaved from the grass, then imprinted into his heart. It could be said that the Curse had accompanied Su Ming through his entire life, and it stayed with him until he became an Antecedental Spirit. At that time, he gathered all his understanding of it and created... the Arid Curse!

This was a strange Art that could Curse Arid Triad. Su Ming had only cast it briefly before the old man from Heavenly Spirit Tribe and did not execute it fully, but at that time, he had already caused the old man's expression to change. In fact, the Art had even stirred up the sleeping Arid Triad, making his original form show signs of waking up early.

After all, the young man formed by Arid Triad in the flesh tunnel and the person who appeared under the tree in the capital planet of the Emperor of Abyss' True World were in truth just manifestations of Arid Triad's will. They were Arid Triad, but also not him.

They were Arid Triad because they were indeed manifestations of his will, which was not much weaker than the awakened Arid Triad, but they were not Arid Triad because they were just remnants of Arid Triad's will before he woke up. That will only had one goal, and it was to destroy all existences who could pose a threat to him.

And Su Ming's Arid Curse had made Arid Triad's original form show signs of waking up. It might be impossible for him to truly make the sleeping Arid Triad wake up, but the fact that the Curse could disturb him was enough to tell just how strong it was.

Furthermore, at that time, Su Ming had just become an Antecedental Spirit. Since then, however, he had already become the strongest in his aeon. The enhancement of his cultivation base and will were difficult to describe in detail. The only words that could be used were that the difference between his current self and his past self was akin to heaven and earth.

Hence, if the current Su Ming cast the Arid Curse, the effects would be much stronger than before.

The ring was the strongest treasure Su Ming had obtained before he became an Antecedental Spirit, but right then... As Su Ming's words echoed in the air and he lifted his right hand to strike the ring, he needed to use it to get himself out of his

predicament. The matter had already stirred up a killing intent in Su Ming that he would not suppress!

When he brought up his right hand, he drew an arc in the flesh tunnel, causing the fog to tumble. Booming sounds rang out, and his right hand shot out like a lightning to touch the ring.

The ring jolted. When light cracking sounds could be heard, numerous cracks spread through the ring... until they covered it whole!

Moments after Su Ming struck the ring, it shattered!

Dozens of fragments spread out, and from a distance, they could be seen forming a circle that continuously expanded.

When the ring shattered, threads that could only be seen by the young man formed by Arid Triad's will were released from Su Ming's body.

The young man might have been hidden in the fog, but it was transparent before him. He could clearly see Su Ming throwing a ring forward. Upon seeing it, he hesitated for a moment, and Su Ming shattered the ring with his right hand. Then, thirty-six thousand something threads were instantly released from all the pores in his body!

This scene caused the young man's pupils to shrink. A sense of danger instantly rose in his body. He was a threat to Su Ming, and similarly, Su Ming was also a threat to him, or else he would not have needed to spend so much time and effort to set up this plot to murder him.

"This is..."

The young man moved to act, but he was a step too late. The thirty-six thousand something threads, which no one else could see, were already released from Su Ming's body. When they rushed out of him, they gathered on his right hand and began weaving with each other.

The description of the scene might have made things seem to have happened slowly, but in truth, everything happened in the blink of an eye. The thirty-six thousand something threads finished weaving themselves in a moment and formed a doll before Su Ming's right hand.

The doll possessed a human's body, but had five heads. One of its head was that of a hissing python, another belonged to a tiger with stripes on its head, one was a wolf's head filled with greed, one was an incredibly dark dragon head, and the one at the center belonged to a boy with contorted features.

The doll created based on Su Ming's Curse was clearly... the Five-Faced Beast Deity who he had fought before! It was a peerless ferocious beast which had once commanded the sky and earth in Arid Triad until Arid Triad sealed it and destroyed it. At that moment, Su Ming made it appear in the form of a puppet and used his right hand to point at the circle formed by the ring.

With it, the five heads of the doll belonging to the Five-Faced Beast Deity jolted. They rose up as if just having been brought to life. They threw their heads back and let out a roar that shook the sky and earth, then charged towards the circle formed by the shattered fragments of the ring.

They instantly surged inside, bringing with them afterimages formed by the countless long threads behind them. It was as if the circle was an invisible exit, and the Five-Faced Beast Deity was about to rush out through it.

The young man formed by Arid Triad moved through the fog and appeared in front of Su Ming. This was the first time he attacked Su Ming directly, and it was unlike the time they had fought with words under the tree. It was also unlike how he had just sealed off all exists in the flesh tunnel.

Right then, for the first time after he showed up in front of Su Ming, a freezing glare appeared in his eyes. A supreme might erupted from his body, which made the entire tunnel tremble. The 360 Expanse Cosmoes in Dark Dawn and Saint Defier beyond the tunnel also shuddered. The four Great True Worlds, too, trembled. Even the True Worlds seemed to be oppressed.

That was Arid Triad's power. At the instant his presence erupted, the young man formed by Arid Triad raised his right hand in front of Su Ming. He did not try to grab Su Ming, but instead went to grab the Five-Faced Beast Deity doll. Judging by the looks of it, the Five-Faced Beast Deity could not dodge his hands. If the young man touched it, the doll would immediately shatter.

Yet the young man's expression was incredibly grim. Clearly, Su Ming's Curse was contained in the doll, and even his pupils would shrank before it.

But he had to destroy the doll. He could see through Su Ming's plan, and he would not allow him to successfully break out. As long as Su Ming could not send his will out and remained trapped, Arid Triad would be able to devour and merge with him without wasting any effort.

Su Ming's eyes flashed. He took a step forward and lifted his left hand to form a seal before he swiftly pushed it towards the young man. When he did so, all of his flesh and blood instantly withered slightly. It was as if this attack had sucked out a little of his life, blood, and soul.

However, it was worth the price for the young man's pupils instantly shrank. He was forced to give up on grabbing the Five-Faced Beast Deity with his right hand, because Su Ming's attack gave him a sense of danger he had never felt before!

The moment Su Ming executed his attack towards Arid Triad and his body withered, his True Immortal Sect World in Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos collapsed. With loud booming sounds, the entire True World withered and shrank...

This was the price Su Ming had to pay for his attack.

The young man's right hand changed direction. His palm swiftly swept outwards and approached Su Ming's incoming strike.

"You sacrificed a True World in exchange for this one strike I would not be able to ignore... Su Ming, I've still underestimated you." When the low voice of the young man formed by Arid Triad echoed in the air, his right hand instantly crashed against Su Ming's left hand.

A loud rumble shook the sky and earth. Su Ming shuddered and coughed up seven mouthfuls of blood. He could not help but stagger backwards, and with every single step he took, a large amount of pink fog would seep into his body, causing his skin to appear a bizarre shade of pink.

With every single mouthful of blood he coughed up, his gaze would become more muddled despite him struggling to clear it up. After coughing seven mouthfuls of blood, Su Ming lifted his head.

Once the young man came into contact with the attack Su Ming had formed by making an entire True World wither, his body collapsed, but immediately after, the shattered bits gathered together again, though they soon collapsed once more before gathering together again. The shattered bits gathered together seven times only to fall apart. Only during the eighth time, when he neared the walls of the flesh tunnel and all the fog in the area was pushed outwards, did he regain his form. When he lifted his head, his face was slightly pale.

When Su Ming saw this, his pupils shrank in a barely noticeable manner. The two of them might seem to be equal in strength, but in truth... Arid Triad had still split a portion of his will and sealed it in the flesh tunnel, or else when their attacks connected just then, the flesh tunnel would have definitely shattered and collapsed.

"Su Ming... what a man!" As he spoke, Arid Triad moved forward, and with an extreme speed, he charged at the Five-Faced Beast Deity, who was about to rush into the spreading circle formed by the fragments of the ring. "But before me, you can't make a fuss."

Su Ming turned to the Five-Faced Beast Deity. “You were sealed by this person in the past. We were never enemies to begin with, and we will not be enemies. I used this doll to gather up your resentment, and with the Arid Curse, I gave you a chance by recreating your body. If after all that you still can’t charge out of this place, both your form and soul will be destroyed!

“If you give it your all and escape, then as long as you manage to flee, I promise... as long as I do not die, you will not die as well!”

Su Ming knew that if he wanted to cast the Arid Curse before Arid Triad and escape from the flesh tunnel to activate the backlash against the three people from Saint Defier, then his main focus laid in Arid Triad himself.

And he only had one chance, that was why... Su Ming chose to use the Curse to manifest the thoughts of this creature he saw before—the Five-Faced Beast Deity!

Chapter 1329: This Time, You Lost!

The Five-Faced Beast Deity did not submit to the world in the past. It did not honor Arid Triad, and while looking down on the entire world, it made itself a supreme, mighty force that swept through the entire universe. Back then, it was even known to be invincible!

The confidence of being invincible gathered on the once Five-Faced Beast Deity, causing it to have the universe at its beck and call. It challenged Arid Triad, but... it lost.

Even though it lost, even though its physical body was torn to pieces, even though its soul dissipated and was sealed in space... its will to fight and its unwillingness to admit defeat continued to exist.

That was why the Five-Faced Beast Deity religion had appeared and why there were people who worshiped this creature and longed to obtain its resentment and its soul fragments to fuse with it.

It was clear just what sort of glory the Five-Faced Beast Deity had enjoyed, and just how pretentious it had been. With his Curse, Su Ming gathered together the soul fragments of the Five-Faced Beast Deity, and with his will, he used threads to form its physical body, allowing the Five-Faced Beast Deity to be able to descend in the world for the first time since it had died.

If any of the Five-Faced Beast Deity converts in the past aeon saw this scene, they would definitely be shocked, and they would immediately regard Su Ming with matchless zeal, because they had only been able to gather together the Five-Faced

Beast Deity's shadow that could not hope to compare to the deity Su Ming formed with his Curse.

One of them was an illusion, and the other was real. One of the wills could only be made to move with the converts' thoughts, while the other... had formed completely and truly belonged to the former Five-Faced Beast Deity.

As Su Ming's words echoed in the air, the Five-Faced Beast Deity puppet formed by the countless threads jolted, then threw its head back and let out a roar that caused the entire area to tremble. The flesh tunnel shuddered, and even Dark Dawn and Saint Defier's galaxies quivered.

The roar contained the presence of time along with an obsession towards the heavens, earth, and all forms of life, as well as an indignation and madness that was so strong it could not be described with words.

It was as if its owner still longed for the life it once led, as if it still harbored resentment and a will to fight that had gathered over the countless years since it lost against Arid Triad.

It could not accept that it had died. Its soundless roar had not been let out just once over the years after its soul had dissipated.

There was only one sentence contained in that roar: "If I had just one more chance!"

If it had just one more chance... Su Ming could not hear its words, and neither could anyone else, but during the countless years and various aeons, its voice had constantly echoed in the universe, and at that moment, Su Ming gave it that chance!

As its roar echoed through the air and the entire universe shuddered, Arid Triad's expression changed for the second time. The first change had been because of Su Ming, and the second change... was because of the Five-Faced Beast Deity!

At the instant its roar rang out, the five heads of the deity instantly gained a ferocious and crazed look. All ten of its eyes shone with an unprecedented light. At the same time, a huge shadow appeared around it. That shadow swiftly gained corporeal form, and it looked like it was about to manifest into the Five-Faced Beast Deity's formerly shocking body.

The Five-Faced Beast Deity roared and the shadow appeared around it while it executed an indescribable speed to charge towards the huge, expanding circle formed by the fragments of the ring after it shattered.

A sense of danger rose like a tidal wave in Arid Triad's heart, one that screamed at him that the plot to murder Su Ming and devour him was about to be broken. He moved, intending to charge towards the Five-Faced Beast Deity to prevent it from leaving, but

Su Ming also rushed forward. He, too, executed his fastest speed to prevent Arid Triad from attacking so that the Five-Faced Beast Deity could charge out of the flesh tunnel.

All of this seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, it was over in the blink of an eye. Arid Triad closed in on the Five-Faced Beast Deity when the creature had already begun to enter the circle formed by the fragments. There seemed to be another world contained in the area of the circle, and the Five-Faced Beast Deity looked as if it had entered a mirror when it went inside it.

“You cannot leave!”

Arid Triad’s eyes flashed. A powerful light instantly erupted from his body. Under that light, his body was immediately concealed, and he transformed into a huge hand that charged towards the Five-Faced Beast Deity.

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming’s eyes. He could not let Arid Triad prevent the Five-Faced Beast Deity from leaving, because this concerned his own survival. Although he might be able to use the power of Harmonious Morus Alba’s wing fragment to escape while Arid Triad tried to stop the Five-Faced Beast Deity...

But Su Ming did not want to, even though this might seem to be the correct choice!

He did not want to flee. He did not want to use the Five-Faced Beast Deity this way... and his pride would never allow him to do such a thing. Why should he run? He wanted to be there and shatter Arid Triad’s plot right before his eyes. The one who would flee could not be Su Ming... but Arid Triad.

Because of that, when the thought of bringing out Harmonious Morus Alba’s wing fragment appeared in Su Ming’s head, he immediately squashed it. With a cold harrumph, he gathered his will, congregated his soul, assembled all his cultivation base, and in an instant... formed a sword that could shock the heavens!

It was the strongest hit Su Ming could bring out in his life, and it was also the one he had used to attack the black-robed young man when he executed the Art of Time to return to the past!

With that attack, Su Ming gave Arid Triad two choices. The first choice was to give up on preventing the Five-Faced Beast Deity from leaving and turn around to fight against him.

The second choice was to not give up on preventing the Five-Faced Beast Deity from leaving, but if he did so, he would have to withstand Su Ming’s attack!

In truth, it might seem like Su Ming was offering two choices, but to Arid Triad, there was only one choice. The moment the violent presence erupted from Su Ming’s body to

form his strongest hit, a hint of conflict appeared in the eyes of the young man formed by Arid Triad, but it turned into determination in an instant.

He believed that he could withstand Su Ming's attack. He believed that the Five-Faced Beast Deity could not flee from his palm, and with this confidence as his foundation, the young man immediately made his decision.

He gritted his teeth and did not dodge Su Ming's strongest attack, simply allowing the illusory sword formed by all of Su Ming's life to close in on him. The young man did not even spare it a glance. He just sent the huge hand he had formed towards the Five-Faced Beast Deity.

In an instant... the palm formed by Arid Triad caught the portion of the Five-Faced Beast Deity's body that had not entered the circle of fragments. A loud bang shook the sky and earth, echoing through the entire flesh tunnel. Within that noise, Arid Triad's growl was mixed in.

"Shatter!"

At the same time, the strongest sword formed by Su Ming's life, will, and his soul closed in on Arid Triad. It pierced the palm, and the sound from the impact overlapped with the loud bang from before, causing an even stronger wave of sound. It made the fog tremble as it fell backwards. The flesh tunnel shuddered, and a large number of cracks appeared on it.

The Five-Faced Beast Deity let out an incredibly shrill roar, and its body shuddered violently. Arid Triad's palm contained a power that could destroy all lives as well as Arid Triad's will.

In fact, that strike was no weaker than the power of the disaster brought forth when all four of Harmonious Morus Alba's wings overlapped with each other. The Five-Faced Beast Deity's body, which had been gaining corporeal form from its previously illusory form, instantly shuddered and broke down. When it shattered to pieces, the destructive power from Arid Triad crashed into the body of the Five-Faced Beast Deity formed by Su Ming's Curse.

It shuddered again and showed signs of collapsing, but at that moment, the Five-Faced Beast Deity let out a roar filled with unwillingness to admit defeat. The madness it had accumulated for countless years and aeons erupted from its body with a bang.

It was a madness brought by its indignation for having failed yet again even though it had received a second chance. It was its strongest will, one that even surpassed its will when it first fought against Arid Triad!

The moment the Five-Faced Beast Deity's strongest will rose up, it turned into a power that accumulated all of its madness, and it crashed violently against Arid Triad's attack.

A loud bang shot up, and it seemed like it would surge into the heavens and last for eternity. Half of the Five-Faced Beast Deity's body shattered with a bang and disintegrated... but with an unprecedented madness and indignation and resentment it had accumulated over countless aeons, it forced the other half of its body to withstand Arid Triad's strike!

"Arid Triad! Damn you, Arid Triad! Even if I have to stake everything I have against you, I will not allow myself to lose a second time!"

The Five-Faced Beast Deity's roars echoed in the air. Four of its five heads instantly exploded on their own to turn into its strongest power to withstand Arid Triad's strike.

Its one remaining head and the small portion of its remaining body... rushed into the circle formed by the fragments!

It charged out of the circle and the flesh tunnel, and with its body formed by the Curse, it left. This scene caused Arid Triad's heart to tremble. He had thought he could definitely kill it, but he had made a judgmental error. While it would have been nothing at any other point in time and he could just deliver another attack to finish the job... the error this time had unsavory outcomes!

First, his plot to murder and devour Su Ming failed!

And second, Su Ming's strongest attack that had a crazy amount of power caused Arid Triad to sense danger.

When the palm formed by Arid Triad turned back into the shape of a human, he turned around, and Su Ming's strongest attack pierced through him. During that moment, Su Ming's faint words echoed in his ears.

"This time... you lost."

Chapter 1330: Backlash!

In the Expanse Cosmos belonging to the Heavenly Foxes within Dark Dawn's camp was Old Man Extermination's tomb. In its third layer was a Rune with an area shrouded in fog. At that moment, the Rune let out cracking sounds. Soon after, they turned into loud bangs that surged into the sky. Countless cracks appeared on the Rune, spreading out swiftly.

It was as if an indescribable power was about to charge out from within it. At the instant the Rune crumbled into pieces that flew out in all directions, the head of a boy with a

ferocious expression charged. Aura was spilling out of the corners of his lips while it dragged four headless necks on what little was left of its body.

At the instant it charged out, it let out a piercing roar at the sky. It held madness, crazed delight, and resentment that seemed to have accumulated over countless aeons.

The endless fog in the area tumbled back when the boy roared. When it charged forth, its body looked like an illusion. There was no material object that could stop it in its tracks.

In an instant, it moved through boundless space to appear in the second layer. When it charged out once again, it shot through the land and appeared above the nine heavens, and with one move... it flew out of Old Man Extermination's tomb!

It appeared in the Heavenly Foxes' Expanse Cosmos, right before the dumbfounded Sovereign of Dawn Yan Pei as well as the chattering bald crane. When the bald crane saw the Five-Faced Beast Deity's broken body, it took a swift step back. If it'd had feathers on its body, they would have definitely been standing at that moment. Clearly, the bald crane was scared.

"You... You..."

The bald crane opened its mouth wide. Just as it was about to say something, the Five-Faced Beast Deity threw its head back and roared again. This was the first time... it truly let out a roar in the universe since it had been defeated.

As it roared, the Five-Faced Beast Deity did not forget why Su Ming had used the Curse to form its body once more. It did not forget the real reason behind why he wanted its help to defeat Arid Triad.

While it roared and an indescribable will and might grew to an extremely great degree on its body, the broken figure of the Five-Faced Beast Deity opened its mouth wide and tore apart the space right before the bald crane, Yan Pei and the Heavenly Foxes' dazed gazes. Then, it instantly left into the distance.

"It tore... space..."

Yan Pei's pupils shrank. By his side, the bald crane stood silent. All of them looked towards the Five-Faced Beast Deity's back as it traveled into the distance through the space it had just torn apart.

As for the Five-Faced Beast Deity, once it charged into the space it tore apart, it mustered its full speed and instantly went through almost one hundred Expanse Cosmoses. It tore through all the space of the Expanse Cosmoses in Dark Dawn's camp to charge towards Saint Defire's camp using the power of the Curse in its body as its guide.

It was so fast that in just the span of a few breaths, it appeared in Saint Defier's camp. It shot through numerous Expanse Cosmoses, and in the next breath... it saw three floating altars.

It also saw the three people sitting cross-legged and meditating on the altars, and its focus was immediately attracted by... the pink liquid flowing from the broken bone in front of the old man sitting on the altar at the top of the triangular formation, as well as the strand of hair swiftly fusing with the bone.

'It's these three!'

At that moment, the Five-Faced Beast Deity only had a boy's head. A ferocious and hideous expression appeared on his face. It tore apart the space again, and immediately, a loud bang shook the skies and earth. That sound traveled into the Expanse Cosmos where the three Lords were, and their expressions instantly changed.

The first to lift his head was not Fei Hua, and neither was it Xuan Jiu, but the middle-aged man, Xiao Song. At the instant he looked up, he saw a huge crack in the galaxy, and a ferocious looking head. It belonged to a boy who stared at him from the crack with a ferocious smile.

The second to lift her head was Fei Hua. At the instant she did so, her pupils shrank and her hair stood up on end. She had a strong feeling of familiarity from the almost human creature. That familiarity made her feel as if she was looking at another version of herself. In fact, when she looked over, she noticed that there was an invisible thread connecting her to the creature!

The Five-Faced Beast Deity charged out of the crack.

Its body might have seemed real, but it was formed by Su Ming's Curse, and the threads of the Curse came from Su Ming's body, which was why the Five-Faced Beast Deity was not actually a physical entity, but neither was it an illusion. Instead, it was an existence caught between a physical form and an illusion. Tearing apart space was its natural ability, and it was also the effect of Su Ming's Curse.

But in truth, it could not directly kill another life. However, it could use the Curse to deliver a backlash on the three Lords, which was why once it flew out, it instantly changed direction and charged... at Fei Hua!

The root of Su Ming's Curse came from Fei Hua. The connection between the ring and her was what Su Ming had used to make the Curse bloom. It was just like karma. There had to first be a cause before the consequences could be delivered.

The connection between Fei Hua and the ring was the cause!

The Five-Faced Beast Deity laughed ferociously. It moved so quickly that Fei Hua could not avoid it. The Five-Faced Beast Deity closed in on her, and its broken body instantly turned into black threads. When Fei Hua's expression changed into one of shock, those threads seeped through her clothes and crawled into her through all her pores and the seven orifices.

When Xiao Song saw this scene, his pupils shrank. His heart let out a thump, and he was sure that something bad was about to happen.

All of that might have seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, it was over in an instant. Once all the black threads seeped into Fei Hua's body, she shuddered. When the Five-Faced Beast Deity disappeared, black smoke surrounded Fei Hua's face. As she shuddered, she coughed up a mouthful of blood, which was black.

Xiao Song, who had a connection with her, shuddered as well. A large amount of black smoke immediately appeared around his face too. It gushed out of him, and he coughed up black blood as well. His presence instantly weakened, and with shock on his face, he let out a cry of surprise.

At the same time, Xuan Jiu jolted. His hands turned black, and even his face looked as if it was covered by black clouds. As his body shuddered, he opened his eyes, and once he coughed up blood, he let out a roar of indignation.

"How can a backlash happen? There's no way a backlash is supposed to occur! I've already asked the greatest will protecting Saint Defier to descend on us, this is impossible..."

Once he said those words, Xuan Jiu's expression changed again. Countless black spots appeared on his body, and they increased in number and size with each passing moment. Some even began festering. A foul stench immediately spread through the area, and even the altar beneath him started showing signs of falling apart.

Xuan Jiu was the only one with the black spots. Fei Hua and Xiao Song did not have them, but their presences grew weaker with each passing moment. Their faces were black. The power of the Curse grew in them at a maddening speed, absorbing their lives and their cultivation bases to turn into an even stronger Curse that landed directly on the old Xuan Jiu, which was why the old man was in such a state.

They had only lasted that long because they were in Avacaniya Realm. If they were slightly weaker, they would have turned into puddles of blood a long time ago, but even if they were in Avacaniya Realm and Su Ming's Curse had descended to deliver a backlash on them, due to Arid Triad's interference, the Five-Faced Beast Deity was quite weak, which also weakened the Curse. However, it was still not something the three Lords of Saint Defier could withstand.

Fei Hua immediately closed her eyes and lifted her right hand to bring out a large number of medicinal cores. She did not even have time to move. She could only sit on the altar and circulate her cultivation base at full strength, not with the intention to fight against the Curse in her body, but to maintain her life force. If she did not do so, then before long, she would die from the Curse.

Xiao Song did the same. The threat of death descended on his heart in a manner he had never felt before. He brought out medicinal cores almost at the same time as Fei Hua and swallowed them without hesitation. He also circulated his cultivation base with all his power to maintain his life force.

“I won’t accept this!”

Only Xuan Jiu did not do so. A ferocious look appeared on his face. He intended to continue casting the Curse without caring about his entire body festering, but suddenly, his lifted right hand turned into a puddle of black blood right before his eyes!

He did not even feel any pain.

At that moment, the bone before him let out a shattering sound. As it rose into the air, the bone crumbled to pieces!

The pink liquid evaporated along with it. The two turned into fog that quickly vanished. Only the strand of hair remained in its place, undamaged. However, it gave off a feeling that it was the one that broke the bone and caused the liquid to evaporate, exuding an air of a supreme existence.

When the bone shattered and Xuan Jiu’s left hand turned into a puddle of black blood, a shrill, broken laugh tumbled out of the old man’s lips. His face had started to fester.

The person which Su Ming hated the most was the old man.

There was no enmity between them, but for some unknown reason, that person had set him up, and Su Ming... had no interest in searching for the reason as to why the other had done such a thing. No matter the reason, as long as he chose to stand against him, he had to be prepared to suffer Su Ming’s wrath and die.

Yet perhaps Su Ming had known the real reason a long time ago. When he was in the flesh tunnel and used his third eye to see the three Lords of Saint Defier, he knew the answer upon seeing the strand of hair in the small bottle with the pink liquid.

That strand of hair belonged to him, but it did not come from him after he had become an adult. It was a strand of hair taken from him while he was still a baby!

It was something prepared a long time ago, and if Su Ming had been at the altars right then, he would throw a question right back at the old man.

“Are you prepared?”

**Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1331: Perhaps It Is
Destined... - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1331:
Perhaps It Is Destined... Bin**
Chapter 1331: Perhaps It Is Destined...

A few moments before the Five-Faced Beast Deity had the Curse descend on Fei Hua, then spread to Xiao Song, causing it to trigger the backlash formed by the Curse in Xuan Jiu's body, thereby causing the bone to shatter and the pink liquid to evaporate...

The strongest attack Su Ming formed by assembling his will, cultivation base, life, and his soul in the flesh tunnel landed on the young man formed by Arid Triad when he turned his head around.

Arid Triad could not dodge it. In fact, he could not even strike back, because Su Ming had already gained the initiative and the upper hand by delivering his attack right when Arid Triad attempted to stop the Five-Faced Beast Deity.

However, while Arid Triad had miscalculated the Five-Faced Beast Deity's ability, had he also miscalculated Su Ming's strength? That question rose in Arid Triad's mind at the instant Su Ming's divine ability approached him.

A loud bang shook the sky and earth when Su Ming's attack landed on Arid Triad's body in its full form and force.

From the distance, Su Ming's strongest attack, born from the accumulation of his entire existence, seemed to have a vast force. However, if anyone looked at it closely, they would find... that the attack was concentrated on one finger of Su Ming's right hand!

It was a tiny little finger, but gathered on it was the terrifying power that caused Arid Triad's eyes to shrink, and it landed at the spot between Arid Triad's eyebrows when he turned around!

When the two came into direct combat, there was no sound. The entire world froze at that instant. The fog in the area no longer tumbled about, the flesh tunnel no longer let out loud booms, and everything in the world outside became quiet. Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos jolted, and Dark Dawn as well as Saint Defier jolted as well.

Su Ming's True Morning Dao World, the Emperor of Abyss' True World, the withered True Immortal Sect World, and True Sky Hill World... also entered a relative stillness.

The lives in the Expanse Cosmoeses could not sense that stillness. In fact, even the Five-Faced Beast Deity could not sense it while moving through Expanse Cosmoeses. Only Su Ming and Arid Triad could sense it, since they could be considered to be the same type of life forms...

There were two more life forms who could sense the stillness. One of them was Harmonious Morus Alba's will in Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos. It clearly sensed the fight erupting between Su Ming and Arid Triad at the moment it happened, and it left it Harmonious Morus Alba nervous, but also expectant.

The last to notice it... was Old Man Extermination, who was sitting beside the gap in the fourth universe contained in Harmonious Morus Alba's fourth wing and who had vanished from the naked eye while meditating on the ancient ship.

He cast his eyes into the distance, and a profound look appeared in his eyes. He could clearly sense the stillness on the entire butterfly.

"In my former home, there is a saying: If the heavens want you to die, they will definitely make you mad first... This sentence is very logical. Harmonious Morus Alba will soon walk down the path of my homeland. That is why... madness has now appeared. One of them is an unparalleled Chosen who Possessed Harmonious Morus Alba aeons ago, and the other is one who was destined to be the strongest of his aeon, the final aeon before Harmonious Morus Alba is destroyed.

"I look forward to their looks of regret when they learn of the truth... Will they be like me in the past?" Old Man Extermination mumbled. After a long while, he sighed softly, and resolve appeared in his eyes when he lifted his head.

"I'm not doing this for myself, but for my homeland. Even if I have to sacrifice all the Harmonious Morus Albas, to me... it will be worth it!"

When Old Man Extermination's voice echoed in the air, Su Ming and the young man's eyes met in the flesh tunnel. Su Ming's right index finger was placed at the center of Arid Triad's brow. The two of them did not move, and it looked as if they would remain in this position for eternity.

"I lost..." Arid Triad did not open his lips, but his words could still be heard. They were followed by a sigh. "I miscalculated the Five-Faced Beast Deity resistance, and I also miscalculated the strength of your strongest attack... Saint Defier's camp no longer has any support. You've already resolved... the plot I set up in this place."

Su Ming did not speak. There was only a hint of aloofness in his indifferent expression.

"We can now call off the promise we made to meet one hundred years later..." Arid Triad's voice now sounded much older. When it echoed in the air, Su Ming spoke faintly.

“Even if you didn’t call it off, I would still have fought against you one hundred years later.”

“Aren’t you going to think about the possibility of working with me?”

“The ancient tree growing on the ocean in the capital planet of the Emperor of Abyss’ True World is just a soul fragment. The real tree... has already withered a long time ago. It died aeons ago.

“Perhaps you remembered your promise to it at some point in time and created that tree, but you couldn’t change its determination to withhold its promise to wait for you.

“There is no way I will work together with someone like you,” Su Ming said faintly.

Arid Triad was silent.

It was as if the flesh tunnel where the two of them were had turned into the ancient tree of the past, and the fog the boundless ocean. It looked just like in the capital planet, where on the vast sea, beside the ancient tree, the shades of green and blue seemed to be connected with the sky...

“I have two questions.” After a long while, Arid Triad’s old voice appeared again.

“Go on,” Su Ming said calmly.

“With your will, it should have been impossible for you to form this attack... The strength of this attack does not rely on your will, not the rise and decline of your life, not the strength of your cultivation base, and not the weight of your soul...

“The main strength of your attack lay in your determination to not even consider your own survival when trapped where you will surely die, and I could sense your previous fear and struggles in that attack. This should be the strongest attack of your life after you were intimidated by some existence and knew you were gonna die. You created this attack because you were unwilling to accept such a destiny...

“And I can also sense that... you haven’t completely finished executing this attack. I want to know where you first launched it, and who made you form it.”

When Arid Triad’s ancient voice landed in Su Ming’s ears, he fell silent.

“An existence who you previously refused to believe exists. He was dressed in a long black robe and had black hair. He held a string of strange pearls in his right hand... and sat on a huge Feng Shui compass. I personally saw this person... devour a Harmonious Morus Alba.”

Su Ming’s answer caused Arid Triad to fall silent.

"I don't know who you're talking about... but after I Possessed Harmonious Morus Alba, I could sense that figure in its memories. It gave off a cordial feeling to Harmonious Morus Alba.

"So... no matter what you saw, there is a high chance you don't need to be worried about it." Arid Triad's voice echoed in the air with a hint of certainty, but when Su Ming heard it, he shook his head.

He believed in what he saw and what he understood from it. He did not believe in Arid Triad's words.

"My second question is about Old Man Extermination you spoke about just now. I... know about him. But where exactly do your worries about him lie?" Arid Triad's voice sounded as ancient as ever, and there was even a hint of fatigue to it.

"He is a person who fled when a Harmonious Morus Alba was destroyed. He fled to our world and is planning something we do not know. Tell me... what exactly am I worried about?" Su Ming asked coldly. Arid Triad was too confident, and in Su Ming's eyes, that confidence could bring the destruction.

"You don't need to worry. He arrived in this aeon, and four hundred something years later, when the four wings of Harmonious Morus Alba overlap and this aeon is destroyed, he will be wiped off."

Arid Triad's voice contained the same confidence that caused Su Ming's brows to furrow.

"What if... there will no longer be another aeon?" Su Ming asked slowly.

"Impossible!" Arid Triad said without hesitation. When he spoke, the young man cast Su Ming a deep look. "We will meet again in the disaster four hundred something years later... Now, you can finish the execution of that divine ability of yours." When Arid Triad said those words, his voice gradually became weaker until it faded away.

"Spirit!"

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He said one final word, and it was the key to his strongest divine ability. It was the word he had uttered when his will shattered after going up against the black-robed young man when he returned to the past with the Art of Time!

At the instant the word tumbled out of Su Ming's mouth, the young man's body jolted, but he did not dissipate. Instead, a shadow appeared and overlapped with him. That shadow split into ten, then one hundred, and continued splitting until it reached tens of thousands... The number of overlapping shadows was so great that it surpassed what a

cultivator could calculate with his naked eye. After all, the overlapping shadows simply could not be seen clearly.

Only Su Ming knew that during that short instance, one hundred thousand overlapping shadows had appeared on the young man who did not disintegrate.

At the moment they overlapped with one another, cracking sounds rang out, and cracks spread out from the spot where Su Ming's finger touched the center of Arid Triad's brow until they covered his entire body. Then... with a bang, the young man's body shattered to pieces, which were reduced to ashes that dissipated into the air. Vanishing along with it were the one hundred thousand overlapping shadows.

This meant that all one hundred thousand of Arid Triad's manifestations... were destroyed at that instant!

Since Arid Triad did not have a body, it was a heavy blow to him. This sort of grave injury caused him to no longer be able to summon the strength to fight against Su Ming... but Su Ming did not have the confidence to give chase and kill him either, because the time had not yet arrived. Only when the disaster appeared and the four wings overlapped with each other could he... have the chance to Possess him.

The instant Arid Triad's body vanished, the fog formed by the poisonous aphrodisiac no longer increased in density and even gradually showed signs of vanishing. Only at that moment did exhaustion appear on Su Ming's face. His gaze was no longer fierce, and his mind became muddled. The poisonous aphrodisiac he had been suppressing all that time boiled in his body at that moment.

Fortunately, the amount of the poisonous aphrodisiac around him no longer increased and even showed signs of dissipating. Su Ming sat down without hesitation and circulated his cultivation base, restraining his will in his body to continue suppressing the poisonous aphrodisiac.

If there was no stimulation from the external world, then before long, when the fog in the flesh tunnel dissipated, Su Ming would return to normal and no longer be affected.

However... he forgot about Zi Ruo.

Not long after Su Ming sat down, a moan came from the fog, and a naked body rushed out to embrace him.

At the instant Zi Ruo reached him, the poisonous aphrodisiac in Su Ming's body seemed to be stimulated, and it instantly erupted in him...

Chapter 1332: Dao... Is Boundless

It was not important to know just how many times Su Ming had experienced changes of heart.

What was important was that with each one, he would go through a metamorphosis, and during those baptisms, his epiphanies gradually reached an abstruse state.

Su Ming did not know that someone during one of the incredibly prosperous aeons in Harmonious Morus Alba had already calculated that if someone reached the peak of the metamorphoses and took one step further, they would be able to reach an even higher Realm. However, that was just a calculation. the person who did it had not been able to reach that Realm, and neither had he gained an epiphany of it.

During that prosperous aeon, Almightyies had predicted that the abstruse state was known... as Dao!

In truth, not many of the aeons Harmonious Morus Alba's universe had lived through had flourished and been especially prosperous, but some Almightyies had predicted a similar Realm. However, they had not been able to calculate and predict it as clearly. They found it to be as abstruse as the Almightyies from the prosperous aeons.

Even Su Ming's aeon had rumors of a marvelous Realm existing after Avacaniya Realm. The name of that Realm... was Boundless Dao!

It was a cultivation Realm, but its main focus lay in the heart.

It was just like Avacaniya Realm. It was a level of cultivation, but it was also an abstruse state of the heart as well as a transformation of a person's state of being. The specific manifestation of the Realm... was in truth divided into two parts.

One of them was when a cultivator only had their cultivation base reach Avacaniya Realm, just like the three Sovereigns of Dawn and the three Lords of Saint Defier. They were the typical examples of cultivators whose cultivation bases had reached Avacaniya Realm.

However, cultivation bases would in the end reach a limit. That was why on the surface, in the eyes of other cultivators, the Lords of Saint Defier and the Sovereigns of Dawn had reached the peak of their levels of cultivation, they themselves knew that they had only obtained the form when they reached Avacaniya Realm. They had not obtained the soul.

This was also why their power was nothing before Su Ming. They might be in Avacaniya Realm, but if they were to divide Avacaniya Realm into initial, middle, later, and great completion stages, the six of them... were only in the initial stage.

And they could only be in the initial stage. In fact, they could only stay in the initial stage for the rest of their lives, unless... they could make the abstruse state in their hearts reach Avacaniya Realm as well. Only by doing so could they reach a breakthrough.

Cang San Nu of the three Sovereigns of Dawn had been powerful because he had Harmonious Morus Alba's wing fragment. Xuan Jiu of the three Lords of Saint Defier was powerful because he was the only one among the six who had reached the borders in regards to the cultivation of the heart. That was why despite still being in the initial stage of Avacaniya Realm, he was clearly stronger than the other people.

The second group had the Antecedental Spirits. Regardless of whether they belonged to Su Ming's aeon or the previous ones, all those who had successfully had their spirits ascend three times could be known as having reached Avacaniya Realm, but that did not mean that they had reached it in terms of their cultivation bases. Instead, by relying on the flaws in their lives being complemented and mended, they could reach Avacaniya Realm by reaching a higher state of being.

Those who had reached Avacaniya Realm in this manner were not strong. Some aspects of them were even weaker compared to those of people who had reached Avacaniya Realm with their cultivation bases. Only when they had their spirits ascend more than six times could they be powerful enough to wipe the floor with powerful warriors in Avacaniya Realm.

However, the people who had their spirits ascend six times were rare and few in between. This was also why Antecedental Spirits were regarded as equals to the Sovereigns of Dawn and the Lords of Saint Defier.

The people who had reached Avacaniya Realm either by relying on their cultivation bases or the ascension of their states would exist as long as the aeon itself, and while it might seem as if they had eternal life, in truth, they could really only live for one aeon.

The prime example of this Realm... was the old man from Heavenly Spirit Tribe.

Eight spirit ascensions had allowed him to become the strongest among all those in the initial stage of Avacaniya Realm. He could sweep through Dark Dawn and Saint Defier and stand at the peak of the universe.

Yet in the end, he was still just in the initial stage of Avacaniya Realm.

If anyone wanted to reach the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm, then the first thing they needed to do... was to not perish in the disaster.

If those who were in the initial stage of Avacaniya Realm obtained a great serendipity and stepped into Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos to search for their other selves and fused with them, they could live through many aeons. There were a lot more

of the people who did not manage this, and when the disaster fell, they could only laugh sorrowfully at the heavens as they flew away with the wind as ashes.

Only those who could live through the disaster could reach the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm.

It was a foundation. Once it was established, they would need to gain an even deeper understanding towards the Realm of the heart. They would also need to have their cultivation bases reach Avacaniya Realm. It could be said that reaching the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm require the heart and cultivation base in Avacaniya Realm. In fact, this also involved a transformation of a person's state of being. Only then... could the person become a powerful warrior in the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm.

The prime examples of that were the old monsters who would not die during the disaster and who had slept through countless aeons. They were among the few who had reached this Realm.

However... the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm was their limit. To many people, it was already the peak, and they did not know how to step over it. It did not matter whether it was their cultivation bases or their states of being, both had already reached the limit, and the truth was... that there was truly no other stage after that.

The Five-Faced Beast Deity was practically the strongest at that stage.

In fact, for most aeons, when they reached anyone reached that stage, they had already reached the peak of their cultivation... That was until there came a cultivator who would later be known as Arid Triad. He... Possessed Harmonious Morus Alba, and in one go, pushed himself to being the strongest he could possibly be, breaking through that seemingly impassable barrier that had existed for an unknown number of aeons.

He succeeded, and at the moment he succeeded, he rose beyond the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm and reached... the later stage!

Hence, after he succeeded, many of those in the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm started trying to Possess and devour Harmonious Morus Alba, but all of them failed. Gradually, they learned to start from something smaller... such as Possessing the will of a True World.

However, since ancient times, no one had ever succeeded in Possessing a True World's will... until Su Ming!

Only he alone completed that feat. Only he alone won a competition against Su Xuan Yi and Possessed True Morning Dao World's will. At the moment he succeeded, it was as if a door leading to heaven had opened before him.

Su Ming had wondered before why he could succeed, but there seemed to be no answer to that matter. After all, Su Ming knew that if he had not succeeded in his Possession, Su Xuan Yi would have definitely done it.

There was a similarity between him and Su Xuan Yi... They were both Abyss Builders!

Once Su Ming Possessed True Morning Dao World's will and fused with his other self, he came into possession of four Great True World's wills as well as succeeded in multiple spirit ascensions and gained an epiphany regarding the God of Berserkers Transformation. It allowed him to borrow the power of one hundred million Berserker souls to truly reach Avacaniya Realm when he was under the effects of the God of Berserkers Transformation... After that, he stepped into the stage that only Arid Triad had managed to reach since the ancient past.

The later stage of Avacaniya Realm!

That was why Arid Triad had said that he had the right to Possess him, because they were in the same Realm.

This Realm was already the limit of all limits. In fact, Su Ming had once believed that even if he went through all spirit ascensions, completely changed his state of being, and Possessed even more True Worlds, he would only become the strongest in this Realm, because he had already reached the end of his Dao, unless... he successfully Possessed Arid Triad.

The other possibility would be that Arid Triad Possessed Harmonious Morus Alba. No matter what, this matter involved them devouring each other. Perhaps only by doing so could they truly attain great completion in Avacaniya Realm, just like how Harmonious Morus Alba had been one complete butterfly in the past.

This assumption lasted until Su Ming saw the black-robed young man when he cast the Art of Time and returned to the past, until Su Ming noticed Old Man Extermination through the butterfly's wing fragment and the murals in the ruins.

Only at that moment did he come to a realization that even after he attained great completion in Avacaniya Realm, there was still a greater Realm above it.

Perhaps this Realm... was the Boundless Dao people spoke of in legends, the Dao that was predicted by the Almightyies during the prosperous aeons.

Su Ming could only stare at that Realm from the distance, unable to even think about touching it, but the moment he was unwilling to give up and chose to attack the black-robed young man to overcome the fear in his heart, he understood a small trace of that Realm...

Spirit.

It was one word, but it was like a seed in Su Ming's heart. It already existed in him, which was something Arid Triad, Harmonious Morus Alba, and even Old Man Extermination did not expect.

There were four complete stages of Avacaniya Realm.

And right then, Su Ming was seated in the flesh tunnel with the pink fog around him. However, an extremely alluring and beautiful naked body that could make all hearts race had wrapped its arms around him.

The enticing figure moved like a snake, twisting and moaning next to Su Ming, as if asking him to embrace it... The woman's cloudy eyes held a temptation that could melt all minds.

The instant the alluring body appeared and straddled Su Ming, panting entered his ears, and a nice, feminine fragrance wafted into his nose... Su Ming might not have opened his eyes, but the poisonous aphrodisiac in his body instantly erupted at full force. His mind instantly descended into a state he could not control, and a wave of desire rushed through his body.

But... Su Ming's level of cultivation, will, cultivation base and his mind still retained a hint of alertness despite his condition. His eyes flew open. An animalistic glare was within them, but a brilliant light shone in their depths.

Su Ming watched Zi Ruo straddle him while not a single piece of clothing covered her body. Her beauty struck him at full force, and even Su Ming struggled against it when a hint of clarity appeared in his eyes.

Her hot body, alluring pants, enticing pink skin, and continuous movement of her hips, subconsciously begging for his attention, would be the most alluring picture if anyone drew it onto a canvas.

There might be a layer of clothes separating them, but Zi Ruo's indescribable lust burned Su Ming's body, making him quiver.

Chapter 1333: You Ming

"This is a change of heart," Su Ming said softly while closing his eyes. His voice was slightly hoarse, as if there was a ball of invisible fire scorching it.

He did not move and simply allowed Zi Ruo to straddle him. No matter how she begged for his touches, Su Ming did not move. He could lift his hand and push her away with the slight alertness remaining in his mind, but he did not do so.

His clothes were still fully on his person. When he closed his eyes, he chose not to continue meditating, but to direct his gaze into his body and his heart.

He could sense that under the effects of the poisonous aphrodisiac, his body had become incredibly sensitive. He had become completely different from before. His emotions became much more easily affected, and he was no longer calm.

Yet the more this was so, the more Su Ming tried to keep his heart calm. It was just like how he had sat on a cliff when he tried to search for the method to calm his heart while in the ninth summit all those years ago. At that time, he had sat like that for nearly a month.

Back then, Su Ming needed to create his own method to clear his mind and gain an epiphany of what changes of the heart meant, and right then, he was doing the same thing. He still sat in the same manner and still tried to gain an epiphany.

However, the things that had disturbed his state of mind at that time were the winds in the mountain and the confusion in his own heart, and right then... what disturbed him was the poisonous aphrodisiac and Zi Ruo, who was moaning and panting against his side.

Su Ming's mind gradually turned blank. He no longer paid any attention to the things around him and dedicated his full attention to watching his heart and soul. He saw how his mind occasionally looked like a raging tidal wave, and how at other times it looked like flames surging into the sky. Sometimes, it would be as calm as still water too.

As it changed, Su Ming gained an epiphany of his change of heart and his mind went through a metamorphosis while he tried... to gain an understanding of the Dao that he could not put into words but which he had glimpsed before.

Dao had to be refined by the vices of the external world, just like how the heart had to be disturbed by external causes to trigger the changes of the heart. If a person could not control themselves, they would find themselves forever stuck.

If they could get through them, their heart and soul would go through a metamorphosis until the person reached a state where they could no longer be affected by the affairs of the world.

With the hint of alertness in his heart, Su Ming could originally push Zi Ruo away, but he did not. Since there were evils in the world around him and a problem had occurred, then with his personality... he would just let the problem come. He would have it disturb

his heart, and during that time, he would refine himself. He would look at the sky while he was in the abyss... and welcome a new life while the flames of lust burned him.

'I will stare at light from the darkness. I do not long for light to come to me... My only desire is to become a black hue that even darkness cannot turn darker!

'I don't like light. In the past, I could not see the light of day and could not see the darkness of night. It was as if the heavens had placed a veil before my eyes. If that's the case, then I don't want to live under the sun. I wish to become... the source of darkness in the universe amid the shadows.

'When I am under the sun, I will chase away the light. When I am in the shadows of night, I will make night fade away, because I am... the only darkness under the heavens, in the galaxy, and in the entire universe!

'This is me... Su Ming!

'My life is one of Possessing others. My life is one that other people cannot hope to replicate. My life... is one that pursues the darkness!

'I can kill countless people. I can destroy all lives in the universe. I can turn day into night, and I can make darkness descend on the earth, but in my heart, there will always be a spot of light left for my family, my friends, and my beloved...'

Su Ming's heart seemed to have found the direction of his metamorphosis as the quiet thoughts echoed in his mind, causing the raging sea to calm, the surging flames to fade, and an unruly ripple to appear in his heart, which was as still as dead water.

'Who was it that said that only light can be magnificent? Who was it that said that only saints can be noble? In the darkness, I can turn the moon into the sun, and I can also turn light into darkness!'

Su Ming's heart had never been as calm as it was right then. He opened his eyes. He no longer kept them closed so that he would not look at the alluring Zi Ruo, because having his eyes shut was a form of running away. Only the weak and those who did not dare to face the temptation would be afraid of having their hearts perturbed and would keep their eyes closed.

'I want to open my eyes and take a look at the world others cannot see. With that determination, I will face this change of heart. I want... to open my eyes and take a look at the evil that caused this disturbance in my heart!'

Su Ming stared at Zi Ruo before him. He watched her curvaceous body clinging to him while she panted and moved her hips, begging for his attention, but his expression remained aloof. It was like the darkness of night. If the now pink-skinned Zi Ruo was light, then it was a fight between light and darkness.

In the fight, Su Ming did not move. His heart did not tremble. Nothing about him moved. He only watched everything before him, and his heart gradually became calmer. The poisonous aphrodisiac in him seemed to be unable to find blood that it could boil and could only wither away. When it lost all of its energy, it assimilated into Su Ming's body.

Su Ming did not consider whether he wanted to engage in activities that only bonded cultivators shared with Zi Ruo. What he cared about was that he would not allow himself to be controlled by the poisonous aphrodisiac, and he would absolutely not allow the little fox to gain the initiative.

The fog around him gradually spread out. It looked like before long, it would completely disappear. Su Ming remained sitting in the tunnel while he watched Zi Ruo before him. His expression was calm, and not a single hint of lust could be seen in it. The red in his eyes had long since faded away, and his breathing had grown calm. As his heart went through the metamorphosis and his emotions calmed down, he transcended a personal barrier.

A pair of unseen eyes saw all of it. Their gaze seemed to have fused with the air and come to exist everywhere. If the owner of the gaze wanted to see something, they could even look into the flesh tunnel. There was no truth that they were unable to witness.

The eyes noticed Su Ming's calm and a presence that even their owner found fierce. That presence was only a feeling that came from Su Ming's conviction towards the darkness.

Old Man Extermination was the owner of that gaze. At that moment, he was meditating on the hidden ancient ship near the gap in space in the fourth universe.

Those eyes belonged to him!

Su Ming lifted his head and cast a calm glance at the air above him. During that instant, for the first time ever, Old Man Extermination's heart trembled, because he felt... as if he had met gazes with Su Ming through space.

At the instant their eyes met, Old Man Extermination shuddered. The hidden ancient ship trembled because of him, and distortions appeared around it. In the end, the ship showed up beside the gap in space in the butterfly's wing.

"Su Ming, what a man. As expected of the strongest of this aeon... and perhaps even the strongest since the history of Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos."

Old Man Extermination's body also showed up when the ship distorted.

'Change of heart. This Art began with Tian Xie Zi, and it was written in destiny that he was to be the strongest of this aeon, but due to my interference, Tian Xie Zie's change

of heart failed... But I didn't expect that his disciples would succeed one after another, up to this Su Ming...

'His change of heart actually caused something in him to grow, something that brings me fear... This presence, damn it. This presence reminds me of that terrifying Xuan Zang!'

Old Man Extermination's pupils shrank, which was a rare sight to be seen, but he did not avert his gaze. He kept staring into space, his gaze locked on Su Ming who was in the flesh tunnel.

And Su Ming did not lower his head either. He simply looked at the air.

Old Man Extermination was silent for a long while before he spoke again. "As expected... of a person that belongs to a race of the man who joined my bloodline, which I later modified and led!"

After he spoke, a loud bang shot up before him. It shook the sky and earth, and resounded very prominently in the constantly rumbling galaxy. A dark figure showed up at that moment.

It was a black-robed man. His clothes as well as the air he gave off were exactly the same as those of the three black-robed men who had previously been there.

The person had appeared with a loud bang. At the instant he showed up, he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to Old Man Extermination.

"He is a descendant of yours. In fact, based on your position among your people, he would even have to address you as his Progenitor... Since he is here, go and meet him. I want... a drop of his blood," Old Man Extermination said faintly.

The black-robed man did not say a single word. He wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply again. When he lifted his head, only the light in his eyes, born from conviction and zealousness that almost resembled foolish loyalty could be seen on his face, which was hidden under a black hood.

He turned around, and another loud bang shot up. The black-robed man disappeared without a trace.

Old Man Extermination gradually closed his eyes. As he did so, the ancient ship he sat upon faded away until not a single hint of it could be found.

It was also during that moment that Su Ming averted his eyes. He lowered his head and looked at Zi Ruo again, but her image was not reflected in his pupils.

“Old Man Extermination, huh? I wonder what stage you belong to in Avacaniya Realm. If you have truly absorbed the presence and power of more than one butterfly before they died, then is the current you... equivalent to a complete Harmonious Morus Alba?” Su Ming wondered faintly, his words echoing in the tunnel.

While he went through his change of heart, there were three black-robed men traveling into Saint Defier’s camp. Each of them summoned a large number of clones, and when they charged forward, they gradually took Su Ming’s form, and with murderous intent as well as aloofness, they rushed into each Expanse Cosmos to bring forth massacre upon massacre.

Due to them taking Su Ming’s appearance, an unimaginable resentment became directed at Su Ming. One day... it might have a terrifying eruption.

The three black-robed men’s appearances were identical to that of You Ming. Their faces were hidden by black hoods, making their features impossible to see. However, there were different aspects about them.

One of them was clearly a big and built man. He had a domineering and aggressive air about him. Another one of them appeared rather thin and lean, and his presence constantly changed. The last one... had an arrogant air that could not be chased away no matter what.

Chapter 1334: The Fourth Universe!

Most of the fog in the flesh tunnel gradually dissipated. At that moment, when Su Ming looked over, he found that there was only a little left, and what remained was already so faint that it could be ignored.

The poisonous aphrodisiac in Su Ming’s body had completely assimilated with him, and it could no longer do anything either. There was no longer any red in the whites of his eyes, and he looked very alert. In fact, he was even more alert than when he had stepped into the flesh tunnel.

Only Zi Ruo still remained pink. The poisonous aphrodisiac in her body had not diminished, but had grown stronger. It had grown to a point where it was endangering her cultivation base and life. This was because of backlash.

It was so strong that she could not disperse it even though she had already reached Avacaniya Realm. After all, it was a poison that had gathered together the power of all Heavenly Foxes and the Curse cast by the three Lords of Saint Defier. Due to Arid Triad sealing the tunnel, it had also been strengthened greatly.

Su Ming stared at Zi Ruo and lifted his right hand to tap the center of her brow. She shuddered, and numerous pink threads appeared on her skin. They rose from her skin like veins before they surged toward the spot between her eyebrows.

If someone looked over, they would find that Zi Ruo's body looked as if she had been covered by a pink net. Several breaths later, all of the pink threads came to her brow. The spot where Su Ming's finger touched had become a pink dot.

Su Ming lifted his index finger from her forehead, and a pink thread followed after. Once he extracted it from Zi Ruo's brow, it turned into fog that disappeared from his finger.

Only at that moment did Zi Ruo return to normal, but her face was incredibly pale, and she was quivering. She wanted to open her eyes, but felt a heaviness that made it feel like even raising her eyelids was too hard of a task. Her body fell limp and she collapsed on Su Ming.

He swung his right hand in her direction. Immediately, Zi Ruo was dressed in one of Su Ming's robes, and after a moment of hesitation, he lifted his right hand to press it against her forehead. With a light pat, a gentle force surged into her body, nourishing her.

With the gentle power from Su Ming, Zi Ruo regained her consciousness around a dozen breaths later instead of having to use her own cultivation base for it. Once finished, Su Ming let go of the hand holding Zi Ruo and took a step into the depths of the flesh tunnel.

He was so fast that he instantly disappeared without a trace.

Zi Ruo drifted about in the flesh tunnel. A gentle light spread out around her and enveloped her. A dozen breaths later, her eyelashes quivered, and she slowly opened her eyes. She looked dazed for a moment, but soon, vigilance entered her gaze. She swiftly got up and looked around herself.

The area around her was empty. Besides the walls on the flesh tunnel, there was nothing else around her. When she saw this, Zi Ruo also noticed that there was a gentle layer of light around her. Once she woke up, it slowly dimmed before it vanished.

At the same time, Zi Ruo also saw that her clothes had turned into male garments... She was momentarily stunned before a red flush appeared on her cheeks. She could only remember things up to the moment her consciousness faded away due to the poisonous aphrodisiac, but in the muddled recollections from what happened after, she could vaguely recall tearing off her clothes, and she seemed to have even wrapped her arms around someone.

In silence, she found that Su Ming was nowhere around. Complicated emotions flashed through her face, but when she lowered her head to check her body, they all turned into disappointment.

She did not know what had happened when she lost her consciousness, but based on what had happened before she woke up, she could somewhat guess what had transpired. She sighed softly, then lowered her head to cast a glance at the depths of the flesh tunnel. She could sense that Su Ming had not left, but was down below, heading towards his destination.

With another light sigh, Zi Ruo bit her bottom lip. She did not continue down the tunnel in search of Su Ming. Instead, she turned around and transformed into a long arc to head upwards, towards the entrance of the flesh tunnel. She felt slightly ashamed, so the only thing she could do was leave.

Su Ming could sense Zi Ruo's arousal, but he did not turn his head back. His heart was as calm as water. In the form of a long arc, he charged down the flesh tunnel, and just like what had happened in Yin Death Region, as he continued charging downwards, he saw the end of the flesh tunnel.

It was, as expected, a Rune.

It was in the form of an octagon. When Su Ming descended, he lowered his head to observe it before he lifted his right foot to step on it lightly. The Rune shuddered, and countless rays of powerful light surrounded Su Ming. Once they concealed his figure, the Rune was activated, and after a moment, Su Ming disappeared as the Rune rumbled.

When he reappeared, he was welcomed by a loud rumbling. The noise seemed to have been around for years, and it formed countless echoes, causing a person to have the misconception that the entire space was roaring when they arrived for the first time.

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He looked around himself and saw a vast galaxy, but it... gave off an incredibly unfamiliar presence to him!

No collisions could be seen in that vast galaxy, but the rumbling did not sound like it would ever weaken.

It was a universe filled with sound, which was something Su Ming had never encountered before. He could also sense how big that universe was. It was clearly a complete Expanse Cosmos that had never been divided.

Su Ming averted his gaze from the area. If he did not have sufficient power, he would have to be careful in this unfamiliar universe, but to the current Su Ming, he had no need to act as such. What he needed was to use his quickest speed to understand that universe. That was why... he had his will swiftly spread through the area.

His will was so strong that it instantly sounded as if thunder had begun roaring, and with him as the center, those thunderous sounds swept outwards. Wherever they went, all life was shocked and intimidated by Su Ming's powerful will.

There was a coffin stuck on a shattered continent in the fourth universe. It was so large that it went through the whole continent, and a small portion of it even shot out at the bottom.

From the distance, the coffin looked incredibly terrifying. The moment Su Ming's will came charging forth with a howl, a growl came from within the coffin. A bang shot into space, and a huge arm broke through the coffin's lid and stretched out. That arm was pitch black, its nails were red, and it had not just five fingers, but six!

There was also a corpse floating in the space in the fourth universe. It was shrivelled and looked as if it had died many years ago, but the instant Su Ming's will swept past it, the corpse's empty eyes suddenly lit up with dark ling. The corpse then slowly sat up.

"Flesh... blood..." A hoarse and unpleasant voice came from its mouth. It gnashed its teeth, and an indescribable presence erupted from its body.

In a spot incredibly far away from the corpse was a planet. It was covered in grass and looked like a cultivation planet overflowing with life. It had multiple cities, and there were countless mortals and cultivators who had lived and grown in numbers for a long, long time there.

There was a mountain on that planet. It was very ordinary, and there was nothing strange about it. At the mountainside was a herd of cows and goats as well as a boy in a shirt. He held a small stick in his hand and was leaning against a huge stone. He stared at the blue sky and white clouds above him while humming a happy tune.

But the instant Su Ming's will swept over the area, the boy jolted, and he instantly lifted his head to stare at the sky. When he did so, an incredibly strange thing happened—all the cultivators, mortals, and other life forms froze and did not move. Their bodies even showed signs of distorting and disintegrating.

It was only when the boy narrowed his eyes and lowered his head after a long time had passed that all the lives on the cultivation planet returned to normal.

"Whose will is this? Could it be that one of the powerful warriors from the past aeons have awakened in the sacred wood?"

There was a huge log floating in a galaxy. The log was so big that it was equivalent to one of the small Expanse Cosmoses in Dark Dawn and Saint Defier's camps.

On the sacred wood were countless densely packed caves. At that moment, when Su Ming's will swept through the universe, low roars shook the sky from inside the sacred wood.

A rebound also spread out, knocking away Su Ming's will. It prevented him from seeing the structure of the sacred wood.

In another direction of the universe was a huge gap, and a vast expanse of emptiness could be seen through it...

Su Ming's eyes focused several breaths after he had spread his will outwards.

'There... is no will here!'

Su Ming did not sense any will in the Expanse Cosmos. Harmonious Morus Alba's will was not present there, and neither was Arid Triad. It was as if this was a territory both of the two great wills had lost.

In fact, the faint thoughts that formed an Expanse Cosmos' consciousness were also absent. This meant that there were not many lives in this place, which was why it could not utilize a race's beliefs and thoughts to form the Expanse Cosmos' consciousness.

'This is indeed... the fourth wing's universe!'

Su Ming stayed silent. He did not bother about the nonstop rumbling around him, because the powerful warriors in this Expanse Cosmos had appeared in his mind's eye, and the image of the sacred wood he could not investigate with his will had also showed up. Most importantly... Su Ming saw the gap leading to the universe beyond!

He was in a different Expanse Cosmos!

In silence, Su Ming slowly lifted his head, and with a relaxed expression, he stared into the distant space.

"Since you have arrived a long time ago, why bother continuing to observe me?"

Once Su Ming spoke, the space his gaze was fixed upon let out a loud bang that drowned out all other sounds in the area. Then, a black-robed man showed up.

Naturally... he was You Ming!

Chapter 1335: Progenitor of Abyss Builders

You Ming was dressed in black robes that had the pattern of falling leaves embroidered on them. The robe covered his body and went down to his feet, making it impossible to see his figure. Any observers could only see a wide, long black robe.

Su Ming could not see the face hidden under the hood, but he could see the bright eyes shining from within it as well as the hint of aloofness within them.

The black-robed man exuded an incredibly great ancient feeling. He felt like the symbol of time passing, but at the same time, Su Ming also had a false feeling that time seemed to distort while around the man!

The black-robed man was distorting time and exuding an ancient air as if he was not a person, but an ancient mirror that was reflecting the changes of the universe across time.

Su Ming stared at the black-robed man, and the black-robed man lifted his head look back at him. The two of them met each other's gazes as the world rumbled around them.

"Your clothes made me think of a few people." A slight smile appeared on Su Ming's face when he spoke faintly.

The moment he opened his mouth, something flashed in the black-robed man's eyes, and a fierce light shone in them. He took a swift step forward, and at the instant his foot landed, a loud roar shook the entire universe. It was much louder than all the other sounds around, a tidal wave that was louder than thunder.

It turned into the strongest noise in the entire galaxy. When it echoed, it distorted space, seeming to want to submerge Su Ming in it and bind him inside itself.

At the same time, the black-robed man lifted his right hand and pushed forward in an entirely casual manner. That push might have seemed gentle, but at the moment it was delivered, cracking sounds rang out in space, and nine huge cracks tore through the galaxy. They were like nine dragons, and the rumbles were their roars. With a speed that the naked eye could not see, they charged at Su Ming, who was bound by the distortions.

A loud bang shot up. The instant it echoed in space, it fused with the endless booms in the area, creating an even louder noise. When it resounded in every direction, more distortions spread to Su Ming. It was as if... as long as he was in that galaxy filled with sound, the black-robed man, who was born from the sounds, would stand invincible.

Amid the loud noise, the nine dragons crashed into Su Ming, making the area around him contort. They forcefully tore the galaxy open to reach their target.

Su Ming watched the black-robed man through the distorted space, and as he stared at the ancient presence as well as the air of time about him, he sighed softly. He already knew who he was. He was just like the four people from the fifth ocean he had seen in Divine Essence Star Ocean, what Su Ming had chosen not to be in the fake Fifth True World—the fifth apostle.

“You are... the Apostle of Happiness!” Su Ming, who looked as if he had been torn apart when space contorted, said slowly, and brilliant light shone in the black-robed man’s eyes. He brought his right hand up and pointed at the heavens before bringing his hand down to push at space. At the same time... he spoke for the first time.

“Time reversal!”

When he said those two words, a layer of golden ripples came from the black-robed man’s right hand. They swept out and instantly affected the area around Su Ming. The power of the Art of Time descended to change the laws of time to make it flow backwards and return to ancient past.

Space transformed, and layers of the galaxy tumbled back, causing the booming sounds to become even louder. The effects even spread to Su Ming, who was within the area.

“Happiness, anger, grief, resentment. Among the four of them, I should have long since guessed... that you are an Abyss Builder.”

Su Ming sighed softly. He did not cast any divine ability, but the third eye at the center of his brow opened, and a brilliant light shone within it. Su Ming’s body, which seemed to have shattered, fragmented even further like a broken mirror, but what fragmented... was a mirror that seemed to have been placed in the galaxy.

At the same time, the contortions around him vanished. Even the booming sounds went silent at that moment. The area affected by the black-robed man’s golden ripples vanished without a trace when the third eye at the center of Su Ming’s brow flashed, as if it was devoured by darkness.

The galaxy returned to normal. It was still the same galaxy as before, and the two of them were staring into each other’s eyes once more. They were the only ones around, and it seemed as if their attacks several breaths ago were just a dream.

“To be in possession of the Art of Time and to be able to become one of the four great Apostles of Happiness, Anger, Grief, and Resentment... Since you are an Abyss Builder, then with your status, besides the Progenitor of the Abyss Builders, who was foolishly loyal to Dark Dawn’s camp, I can think of no one else.

“But by the looks of it now, you were not loyal to Dark Dawn... but Old Man Extermination.” Su Ming shook his head. He felt a variety of emotions in his heart, but there was also a hint of relief among them.

Because at that moment, he had learned something. Be it Tian Xie Zi or Lie Shan Xiu... both of them had not died. They were the four great Apostles of Happiness, Anger, Grief, and Resentment. If the Apostle of Happiness was still around, then the other three apostles were naturally around as well.

“I, too, am very glad that I could meet with a descendant of the Abyss Builders,” the black-robed man said in a hoarse voice. It echoed in the area, and he did not intentionally suppress the rumbles around him. He simply let his voice echo amid the loud bangs in the galaxy, and they naturally and steadily fell into Su Ming’s ears.

The black-robed man was... clearly a cultivator who had reached the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm, and whose level of cultivation surpassed those from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. He was even slightly stronger than the old man from Heavenly Spirit Tribe!

And Su Ming did not sense Harmonious Morus Alba’s presence on him. He... had not fused with his other self from Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos.

They were in the fourth universe. It was a completely different Expanse Cosmos to its relative Expanse Cosmos—Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. There were... not many people in it either, which was why the cultivators from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier could not find their others selves here.

After all, the gap leading to the Vast Expanse existed in that Expanse Cosmos... and the powerful warriors who had lived through the various aeons also lived there. Most of them were asleep, but there were some who had already awoken.

It might only be able to happen in the fourth universe.

Perhaps it was because of those reasons that the Expanse Cosmos... gained various differences distinguishing it from Harmonious Morus Alba’s third wing—Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. In time... it then turned to be truly different from its relative Expanse Cosmos.

When the black-robed man spoke, he lifted his right hand and pulled back the black hood from his head to reveal an old face covered in wrinkles. He had a head full of white hair. His sunken eyes shone with an eye-catching light when he looked at Su Ming.

His face was somewhat similar to Su Xuan Yi’s, and his domineering air was revealed without any restraint at that moment.

He was You Ming, the Progenitor of Abyss Builders, the strongest person in Arid Triad's Fifth True World!

Su Ming was an Abyss Builder, but if he were to compare the purity of his blood, he could not compare to Su Xuan Yi, much less the Progenitor of Abyss Builders standing before him right then, who was already a ruler of a region when he was in the third era of their aeon.

Su Ming was silent for a moment before he asked slowly, "Must we continue with this fight?"

"There were originally not supposed to be any Abyss Builders. There was just Great Abyss Tribe. Only when our benefactor appeared and used his blood as a guide did Great Abyss Tribe slowly turn into the Abyss Builders.

"I will never be able to repay his kindness, and I once swore that all Abyss Builders will worship our benefactor for all their lives. They must be his slaves until the universe shatters.

"You are an Abyss Builder, so you must obey this as well. If you don't obey... your blood will deliver a backlash on you, because this is the destiny of Abyss Builders since an eternity ago!" the Progenitor of Abyss Builders said slowly, and a fierce light shone in his eyes.

Su Ming stayed silent for a moment before he sighed softly and said, "That is your destiny, not mine. Since you insist on fighting me, then I will respect you, as you are the Progenitor of Abyss Builders. I will not use my will to suppress you. We will both cast the Art of Time, and let us see who among us will be the first to fall."

Men couldn't forget their roots. Su Ming's attitude towards the Progenitor of Abyss Builders was different from his attitude towards Su Xuan Yi. He respected this person a lot, and this respect was not related to Old Man Extermination. It was solely limited to the Progenitor of Abyss Builders for his acts of supporting the Abyss Builders in the Fifth True World while he was there so that the Abyss Builders could rise to power. Su Ming could also never forget what Su Xuan Yi's wife—the woman in the fifth kiln—had told him.

When Su Ming was born... his name was given to him by the Progenitor, and he believed it to be true.

The Progenitor of all Abyss Builders... If he could choose not to fight against such a person, Su Ming would not fight against him, but if he had to fight him, Su Ming would give him the respect he deserved, which was why... he chose to use one of the Abyss Builders' inborn abilities—the Art of Time.

"Very well."

The Progenitor of Abyss Builders cast Su Ming a deep glance. After speaking, he sat down cross-legged in space, and his eyes fell shut. The power of the Art of Time instantly erupted from his body. It came off in waves of gold which soon became the brightest light in the galaxy.

In silence, Su Ming also sat down cross-legged. His eyes fell shut, and gradually, his body started to fade away. Darkness appeared around him, and it looked like he was about to fuse with darkness of the galaxy, but his darkness did not fit with the other... because the galaxy's darkness was not worthy of dyeing Su Ming's darkness black.

If there was anyone going to dye anything black, then it would be Su Ming dyeing the entire universe black.

"We will start now."

The Progenitor of Abyss Builders opened his eyes before speaking, then closed them again. A thick wave of power belonging to the Art of Time immediately turned into a piercing light about him. It instantly swept through the area like the white of the sky. It swiftly illuminated the galaxy within it, as if no darkness could exist before it.

The reversal of time... was activated at that instant.

Chapter 1336: The Autumn Breeze Blows

The fight using the Art of Time was a competition about who would last till the end and who would not end up being reduced to a skeleton in the passage of time. In this aspect, the Progenitor of Abyss Builders had the upper hand, because he had lived for a long, long time, and he could make tens of thousands of years reverse at once.

Su Ming might not be able to do that, but he did not cast the Art of Time at all. He only sat there quietly and stared at the galaxy. He watched the universe and simply allowed the Progenitor of Abyss Builders cast his Art.

He was like a tree. When wind blew against him, perhaps he would sway along with it, but in the end, it was just wind, and the tree would still be a tree. It would only sway for a moment, not for an eternity.

Once the autumn breeze blew through and the rosy rays of dawn arrive, the tree would still be standing. If one saw that it was moving, then it was moving. If one saw that it was not moving, then it was not moving.

There was once a person who said that the person's heart would determine whether the tree they saw was moving or not. He said it because the main focus of the phrase landed on the person who looked at the tree itself, but to Su Ming, the thing that moved was his own heart... because he did not care about the heart of the person who watched the tree. His only concern was himself.

If his heart was not swayed, then all manner of lives in the world would not move, and if all things did not move, then the universe would not move... and then, all wills would not be swayed or transformed.

The person who watched the tree left with a smile, thinking that they had gained an epiphany, but the moment they turned around, that epiphany actually belonged to the tree. What came after karma? It was not truths and falsehoods, neither was it illusions and reality. Instead, it was this...

"When you learn who you are, you... are no longer you. When you no longer know who you are, you... will be you!"

If a person was not swayed, they would not understand, and it was precisely because they did not understand... that they would not need to understand. They would, instead, come to understand a certain state. It was just like the logic with the changes of the heart. Once they ended, Su Ming would always come to understand something he could not put into words.

'When you look at the tree, the tree is also looking at you... When you are trying to understand Dao, Dao... is also trying to understand you. When you are you, you are not you. Only when you are not you, will you be you.'

A hint of a smile appeared on Su Ming's face. It was very faint and barely discernible, just like the smiles that would appear when one thought they had come to see through the truth behind something.

Su Ming was in a battle of Arts without any use of intense divine abilities. The powerful light from the Progenitor of Abyss Builders surpassed everything.

If someone looked over, they would feel as if it suppressed the darkness that Su Ming represented, but after the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, the Progenitor of Abyss Builders opened his eyes, and a hint of exhaustion appeared in his gaze. There was also a hint of praise there, but it soon disappeared.

When he opened his eyes, the Progenitor of Abyss Builders spoke hoarsely. "I need a drop of your blood."

Su Ming stood up. He did not say anything, but instead walked slowly forward. He moved past the spot where the Progenitor of Abyss Builders sat, then walked into the distance. He... did not reply.

When Su Ming left into the distance, blood trickled out of the corners of the Progenitor's mouth. It fell on his robes and looked like it was about to seep into the past.

He lost.

His Art of Time was so strong that it could instantly cause tens of thousands of years to move in reverse, but when he used it on Su Ming, he still lost. Even if Su Ming had never cast the Art of Time, the Progenitor still lost, fully and completely.

It was as if he had become the wind, or the person staring at the tree.

He had lost psychologically, but it was a loss that brought a smile appear to his face. It looked like for the first time ever, he did not care about Old Man Extermination's task. He was smiling from the bottom of his heart.

Old Man Extermination was his benefactor. He wanted to repay his kindness, and the Abyss Builders had to repay his kindness, but he... was still the Progenitor of Abyss Builders. There were plenty of times when his status was ignored, but in his heart, it... was his greatest pride.

"You are the first to understand the true essence of the Abyss Builders' inborn ability to control time," the Progenitor of Abyss Builders said softly.

After a long while, he stood up. He did not turn his head around either before choosing to walk into the distance. He smiled while doing so.

His clothes were the first to be reduced to ashes. It was followed by his legs, then his upper body, and when his head as well as his soul were reduced to ashes, he passed away while walking into the distance.

All traces of his existence disappeared from that moment, and he died... due his own Art of Time!

It was very profound. Perhaps there were few who understood it, but it was a matter with divine abilities. It... was how Dao was.

When the Progenitor of Abyss Builders' body disappeared, Old Man Extermination sighed softly while meditating on the hidden ancient ship beside the gap in space within the fourth Expanse Cosmos.

"I still underestimated him..." he murmured to himself. "The ability to control time is only born during the last aeon. That is what I have seen in the worlds of the four Harmonious Morus Albas I lived through. There has never been an exception, and it is the same for this Harmonious Morus Alba.

"It is just like how a person likes to remember the past when they are old. The Art of Time appeared because Harmonious Morus Alba no longer has a future and can only exist in the past. Hence, in actuality, its users are people created by Harmonious Morus Alba due to its natural instinct before it is destroyed.

"I have gathered together the blood of the races with this talent in the final aeons of the previous three Harmonious Morus Albas before they were destroyed. In this fourth Harmonious Morus Alba, I found Great Abyss Tribe, born on this butterfly, and as I researched countless races, I found the way to perfect fusion. I changed the Great Abyss Tribe and created the Abyss Builders, a race with the inborn ability from the culmination of four Harmonious Morus Albas.

"It is a beautiful race... a breathtaking race that will make others envious.

"Since their talent is too great, I couldn't allow them to continue growing. I had to destroy them, because I only wanted the strongest one among them!

"You Ming was one of them, and Su Xuan Yi was also one of them. As for this Su Ming... he was not someone I paid attention to, but as chance would have it, he has already grown this much!

"He Possessed a True World's will and became the strongest in this aeon, reaching the later stage of Avacaniyan Realm. But even so, I can still control him. He will be just like the lives in the other Harmonious Morus Albas. None of them were able to escape from their destinies.

"They cannot escape from becoming the sacrifice Xuan Zang needs. They are also a secret that has not been told between me and Xuan Zang," Old Man Extermination mumbled, then lifted his head to look into the distant galaxy.

"But he..."

A ferocious expression suddenly appeared on Old Man Extermination's face, causing his face to contort. A presence, which he seemed to be barely able to suppress, almost spread out from his body.

"He has actually managed to figure out the slightest bit of the essence of the Art of Time. This is something I pondered upon for a long time before I was able to figure it out... What gave him the right to gain such an epiphany?!

"There are four levels to the Art of Time. The first level is of the wind blowing against the tree. It can be seen as a simple reversal of time. The second level is of the tree viewer standing beside the tree when the wind blows against it. The person would stare at the tree being moved by the wind, and they would come to understand that the tree would not move when the heart is not swayed!

“The third level is of becoming the tree. Only when you’ve reached this level would you be able to truly be able to understand what the Art of Time means!

“I’ve only discovered an inkling of the fourth level, but during the instant just then, I clearly sensed... the signs of the fourth level.”

As Old Man Extermination’s expression twisted, a fierce glare gradually appeared in his eyes.

“Even if you are the strongest person I’ve seen in the four Harmonious Morus Albas I’ve lived through... you will still be unable to run from the destiny of becoming a sacrifice!

“You are bound to be a sacrifice, bound to be the stepping stone for me to take the final step to become the same existence as Xuan Zang... The time has not arrived yet. There are still four hundred something years. It will be soon though, very soon...”

The ferocious expression on Old Man Extermination’s face gradually faded away. He calmed down and cast a deep glance into the distance before he turned his head back to look at the gap leading to the Vast Expanse. His gaze penetrated space, and no one knew how far he looked into it. Vaguely, he seemed to be able to see a Feng Shui compass that made him tremble rushing over.

On the Feng Shui compass, he saw a young man with black hair and black robes, whose face was aloof and did not hold any expression. The young man had a string of pearls on his right wrist. Some of them shone with a dark light, alternating between flashes of brightness and darkness.

Fear appeared in Old Man Extermination’s eyes. His heart trembled. When he averted his gaze, he let out a long and deep sigh before closing his eyes.

.....

Su Ming walked through the galaxy. He seemed to have already grown used to the booming sounds around him. He did not turn his head back, because he knew that the Progenitor of Abyss Builders had found his resting place. He had died in his own Art of Time.

Perhaps this sort of end was a formless release for the Progenitor of Abyss Builders, but only the Progenitor himself would know whether it was the answer he wanted. It was impossible for others to understand his heart after he had lived for tens of thousands of years.

Even Old Man Extermination could not do this.

The Progenitor had silently watched the race he brought up with his own hands be reduced to ruins under his own administrations. An innumerable number of his people

had died. No one knew whether their shrill screams echoed in his head when he meditated.

Perhaps they did, because he was the Progenitor of Abyss Builders.

But perhaps they did not, because he was Old Man Extermination's slave.

Su Ming walked quietly. His footsteps while walking through the galaxy were not quick, but every single time he took a step forward, the galaxy would change. He continued moving until he reached a cultivation planet.

When he looked at it, his left eye saw a cultivation planet filled with an abundance of life. There were countless cultivators practicing the ways of cultivation on it, along with numerous mortals living happily by themselves. There were lush green mountains, crystal clear waters, blue skies, oceans filled with life, as well as rising and falling mountain ranges. The cultivation planet was an existence that seemed to be operating under some form of law.

There was a boy staring back at Su Ming from a mountainside.

With his right eye, Su Ming saw a huge meatball exuding a foul stench. There were countless tentacles squirming about it. The mountain ranges on the cultivation planet were bone spikes, the ocean was a swamp on its back, and the rising and falling mountains were its ribs. As for the cultivators and mortals, they were... skeletons who no longer had any life and who had died an unknown number of years ago.

There was a bone spike sticking out diagonally from the center of the meatball's brow. It was like a mountainside, and on it stood a boy staring back at Su Ming.

Chapter 1337: Test!

"Sir, what is your intention for coming here?"

The boy grinned in an incredibly exaggerated fashion. The corners of his lips split till they reached his earlobes, revealing a ghastly mouth as well as countless sharp teeth.

When he smiled, the huge meatball beneath him immediately started squirming and letting out a threatening air.

"I have no ill-intentions. I was simply passing by and grew curious about this planet," Su Ming said faintly, and his field of vision returned to normal.

He had seen an ancient air about the boy, which meant he was a cultivator who had fused with his other self an unknown number of aeons ago to obtain the right to not perish during the disaster.

The boy had reached the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm, which was why he could wake up before the time frame, but Su Ming believed that he could only remain awake in this place and not leave the fourth Expanse Cosmos. If he did, he would most likely fall asleep again.

Su Ming had seen several powerful warriors like him when he sent his will sweeping out. The boy before him was just one of them.

The boy sank into a moment of pensive silence before his smile faded away. "If that is the case, you are a guest, since you came from afar. Fellow Daoist, would you be willing to descend on my planet and have a drink of nectar?"

"If you come, I can call some good friends of mine over as well. They must surely be interested in your origins."

The boy smiled faintly, and he looked incredibly innocent. He stepped on the ground lightly, and the meatball beneath him immediately jolted. When it began contorting, all that Su Ming could see before his naked eyes was the cultivation planet overflowing with life.

Unless he used his will to sweep through the place, it was impossible for him to see the truth about the place. Clearly, the boy did not want anyone to see the ugliness of the meatball, which was why he spared no pains in using his power to cover it up.

Su Ming cast the boy a look. His expression was calm, and no changes of emotion could be seen on his face. Su Ming did not care whether the boy hid any ill intentions. After all, with Su Ming's current level of cultivation, the number of people who could pose a threat to him in all four of Harmonious Morus Alba's wings could be counted on one hand.

Arid Triad could be counted as one, but for the time being, he could not attack again. As for Harmonious Morus Alba... with Arid Triad keeping it in check, the butterfly's will was incredibly timid.

If there was one who could truly pose a threat, it would be Old Man Extermination.

He had hid himself for a long period of time, never letting himself being seen. Clearly, he did not want to immediately determine who would win and live among them, which meant he was aiming for something big. But once Su Ming assumed this much, he could guess that he was already standing supreme in Harmonious Morus Alba's Expanse Cosmoses.

‘Perhaps this advantage will only last for another four hundred years.’

Su Ming sighed in his heart. He knew full well that if the black-robed young man came, then the moment he arrived, true destruction would descend upon them. Harmonious Morus Alba would cease to exist, and Arid Triad would be destroyed. There would be no disaster, and there would no longer be any new lives born.

Even he... would be unable to survive that destruction. The only path remaining for him would be to act like Old Man Extermination. He could only watch his world disappear, his family as well as his friends return to ashes while he... brought with him hatred, madness, and a darkness that could cover even the darkness of night while he left by himself.

This understanding caused Su Ming to remember the scene he had witnessed from the secrets of the universe...

He could never understand why that version of him would slaughter its way into Dark Dawn and Saint Defier after throwing its head back and crying out in grief once he saw the countless corpses, becoming the so-called Devil once he killed most of the lives in the two camps.

‘What is the Devil?’

Su Ming had thought of this question before, but even right then, he did not have the answer. His only clue... was that Old Man Extermination was connected to Dark Dawn.

But that was only a clue.

After thinking about it, Su Ming looked at the boy and nodded slowly. He took a step forward and descended on the illusory cultivation planet and stepped into its atmosphere. Then, he arrived at the mountainside, right in front of the boy.

The sky was blue. The mountain wind was gentle, bringing with it a faint, cooling air. It blew against the grass, causing it to sway, while the cows and sheep in the distance ate it demurely. The boy was leaning against a mountain rock. There was a smile on his face, and it appeared naive and innocent, but when Su Ming took a closer look, he could see the aloofness coming through the boy’s eyes from the core of his being.

The planet was very big. When Su Ming landed on it, he felt like he could hear the noise from the people on it. He could hear quite a number of cultivators fighting against each other, be it due to verbal arguments or because of disagreements.

He could sense that at that instant, many babies were born, and at the same time, there were also a lot of people who died. Everything worked in perfect tandem to form a cycle.

“This divine ability is quite impressive,” Su Ming said faintly after a while.

“Fellow Daoist, I am not worthy of your praise.”

The boy smiled faintly. He swung his right hand, and the mountain where he was immediately distorted. When it became clear again, it turned into an existence resembling a volcano. The sunken portion was a platform, and they were surrounded by walls. Above them was the blue sky. It was... a cave abode.

A huge table was placed in the middle. The cows and sheep that were previously around them had turned into boys. In their hands they held some fruits and nectar, which they placed on the table.

Su Ming sat down, and the boy went to sit across from him. When their eyes met, the boy continued to smile. He brought out a jade slip and pushed it against the center of his brow. After a moment, the jade slip started burning at the boy's forehead.

“After a moment, some of my good friends will come. I haven't introduced myself. I've chosen to forget my real name due to the disaster of my aeon. My Daoist monastic name has also changed continuously due to the epiphanies I gained through time. Right now, you may call me... Ban Bu Zi.”

While speaking, the boy lifted his wine cup and looked at Su Ming.

Daoist monastic name was not a not used in Su Ming's aeon. Clearly, it was a term used many aeons ago, during the time belonging to the boy.

Su Ming picked up his wine cup and said softly, “Su Ming.”

“Fellow Daoist Su, those who have come from afar are my guests. Today, allow me to receive you.”

The boy laughed, then picked up his wine cup and finished its contents in one gulp. He held the cup and tilted it, showing that he had finished everything and not a single drop was left.

Su Ming's smile was faint. He lifted his wine cup and drank the wine. Once it entered his stomach, it turned into a hot stream that flowed through his entire body. Then, that heat exploded in all parts of his body to charge to his throat, turning into a spiciness that could not be described with words.

But that spiciness only lasted for one breath before it turned into a sweet taste, causing the breath he exhaled when he opened his mouth to smell sweet.

“How is it?” The boy lifted his head and cast a gaze at Su Ming.

“It's very good.”

Su Ming closed his eyes and savored the taste for a while. When he opened his eyes, praise showed up on his face. Even if he did not drink often, he could tell that the wine could be known as nectar.

“I have always only invited those who share my views to drink my wine. Even in Heaven Lacking Expanse Cosmos, there are less than a handful of people who have the right to drink this wine.”

There was a smile on the boy’s face. He put down his wine cup with some pride, then lifted his head to look at the sky above.

“Boasting again, huh? If it wasn’t because you added the blood of that strange creature from the Vast Expanse, how could it possibly be so captivating? Come, prepare a pot for me as well.”

Hoarse laughter rang in the air, and a huge face appeared in the sky above. It charged to the ground, but it did not get bigger. Instead, it became smaller, and when it descended, it turned into an old man in a long blue robe. He was tall, and while there might be quite a number of wrinkles on his face, Su Ming could tell that he was definitely a handsome man when he was younger.

At that moment, his body turned into a purple ray of light that appeared beside the boy the next moment. He picked up the wine cup on the table, and once he finished it in one gulp, he let out a long sigh and sat down at the table.

“Fellow Daoist, you must have been the one who sent his divine thought outwards just now.”

The moment the old man in purple robes sat down, he looked over.

Su Ming smiled faintly. He did not speak. Instead, he looked at the sky above them. At that moment, a figure appeared in the sky. It was a young man dressed in a long white robe. He had an aloof look on his face, and on his back he carried a huge sword. He exuded an incredibly fierce presence. When he took a step forward, he walked into the cave abode and sat down beside the boy.

Before the boy could introduce him, a ghastly, untamed laughter came from the sky and turned into a wisp of black smoke. As it spun around the area, Su Ming could see a mummy inside it. The mummy had withered and resembled a skeleton.

Dark light shone in its eyes when it walked out of the black smoke. The man only took three steps forward before he appeared in the cave abode. He cast a cold glance at the crowd, then his gaze stopped on Su Ming.

“That Old Wretch Hei entered isolated training in his coffin. I reckon he won’t be able to come. We’ll all be here now. My fellow friends, I invited fellow Daoist Su here today so that

we may get to know each other. It can also be considered a serendipity.” The boy swept his gaze over the crowd and laughed.

“Fellow Daoist Su Ming, I will first introduce you to these three people. The old man in purple robes is the strongest person from the Martial Ideal Aeon. I’ve already forgotten his name. Everyone here just calls him Reverend Zi.”

When the boy introduced him, the old man in purple nodded at Su Ming. It might have been the first time they met, but the purple-robed old man was incredibly wary of Su Ming. However, there was also a hint of curiosity in him. If that had not been the case, he would not have come.

“As for this fellow Daoist, he was famous in Heaven Lacking Expanse Cosmos and was the strongest in his aeon. Sword Immortal Li Han’s sword has been brought out 3,907,891 times, and every single time it was brought out, someone died,” the boy said, continuing his introductions.

“It’s 3,907,892 times. When I came over, I ran into an idiot, so I drew my sword and killed him,” Li Han said faintly. When he looked at Su Ming, a fierce glare appeared in his eyes.

“And this...” The boy cast a glance at the figure who was as thin as a skeleton, but before he could finish speaking, the person cackled strangely and spoke on his own.

“I’m Ku Mu, and I love eating flesh, but there’s only two chances for me to devour other people’s flesh and blood as I please each aeon. Still, based on my calculations, that day is no longer far away.”

When Ku Mu said that, the boy scowled.

Chapter 1338: Ruthless!

When Ku Mu finished speaking, the boy scowled. Su Ming was his guest, and since he invited him over, he did not intend for things to go sour between them. Instead, he had his own plans. But whatever they were, most of them had the intention of befriending Su Ming.

People at the boy’s level of cultivation had few things they cared about, but for some reason, he felt uneasy about the latest aeon. It was as if something bad was about to happen, and as time passed and the disaster came closer, that feeling grew stronger. When he saw Su Ming, he could tell at first glance that Su Ming was not from his Expanse Cosmos, and for some unknown reason, he wanted to befriend him.

The boy could not see through Su Ming's level of cultivation, but he could sense that the newcomer was not weaker than him.

When the boy scowled, the old man in purple beside him narrowed his eyes slightly. He did not speak. As for the young man in white, brilliant light shone in his eyes, but no one could really tell what he was thinking.

Su Ming's gaze landed on Ku Mu's skeletal figure. The people around the table were silent and watchful, but all of them had given silent consent to the test. Only the owner of the place, the boy, seemed to be rather displeased. Judging by the looks of it, he was not pretending either.

Su Ming naturally knew that Ku Mu would not do this out of nowhere. It was clearly a test. In other words, he was trying to gauge Su Ming's level of cultivation.

"Try saying that one more time," Su Ming said flatly.

There was not a hint of anger in his voice, as if he was having a casual conversation with friends. In fact, even the purple-robed old man and the young man in white could not detect any sort of frightening might in his words.

Even the boy, who had intended to speak up, continued scowling when he heard Su Ming's words, but he did not say anything.

A faint glint shone in Ku Mu's eyes at that moment, and he spoke while cackling in his strange manner. "Didn't you hear? I like eating flesh..."

When he spoke, Su Ming suddenly lifted his head and seized the air with his right hand at a speed of lightning.

Since the skeletal man dared to try to gauge his strength, he was naturally confident in his own power, and since he still dared to repeat himself, he had to have made preparations for it. He might not have seemed like he was about to attack, but the instant Su Ming brought up his right hand to seize the air, a chill ran through Ku Mu's entire body. All his divine abilities... seemed to have vanished from his body at that instant.

All of that happened in the blink of an eye, and a shrill scream of pain tumbled out of the skeletal man's lips. His head and his body were instantly separated. Once Su Ming grabbed his head, he squeezed it lightly with a calm expression. A trickle of blood immediately flowed down from the spot where he had separated the body from the head. That blood flowed into the cup in front of Su Ming.

Not a lot of blood fell, and it only filled half a cup, but this scene managed to shock all the people around the table. Neither of them dared to say a word...

'This person... might seem gentle, but his ruthlessness is in complete opposite to his outer appearance!' The purple-robed old man's pupils shrank. Su Ming's actions were ruthless enough to shock him.

Su Ming's attack brought a storm to the purple-robed old man's heart. He realized that even he would have been unable to avoid it!

But more importantly, Ku Mu's reaction was incredibly strange. He had showed no resistance at all, but the purple-robed old man did not believe that he had not wanted to fight back. It was clear that Ku Mu's cultivation base had been suppressed some unknown method.

The brilliant light in the eyes of the young man in white instantly disappeared, replaced by a hint of shock. What he paid attention to was not Ku Mu's power, and neither was it Su Ming's ruthlessness, but Su Ming's lifted hand.

Other people might not care about how quickly he brought it up, but since the young man was a Sword Immortal, his strength lay in his speed. Yet when Su Ming brought his hand up, acting as if nothing had occurred, the young man had seen ninety-seven seals.

'I could only see ninety-seven seals, but during that instant, he had made hundreds of seals. This sort of person...' The young man in white's expression changed swiftly. The wariness in his heart instantly reached its peak.

As the owner of the place, the boy was shocked even more than the others. The cave abode was formed by his original form. The boy everyone saw was fake. His real self... was the huge meatball Su Ming had seen before.

He was a powerful life form that was as strong as the Five-Faced Beast Deity, but he was smarter than it. He hid himself and transformed his body. He did not act arrogantly, did not kill, and lived through the disaster of his aeon while keeping a low profile.

That was why he could clearly see why Ku Mu could not fight back just then. It was because the power of time had gathered on his body. In an instant, countless years had flowed back around him, until he was reduced to the time when he was still a mortal. It had happened extremely quickly, which was why the others did not notice it. Even Ku Mu himself had not understood it.

'This person... is this powerful?!' This was the only thought that rose in the boy's head once his breathing started to quicken.

If that was the shock the onlookers felt, then the headless Ku Mu's shock was even greater. He staggered a few steps backwards before his body shrank. Then, he turned into fog and reassembled himself there. When he manifested his form again, his body

had shrunk slightly, but a new head had appeared on top of his neck. Shock and disbelief could be seen on his face.

He watched Su Ming hold his head while his precious origin blood fell into the wine cup.

As everything in the area stayed silent, the head in Su Ming's head became even more withered until it turned into fog. Then, it vanished while Ku Mu's heart twisted in pain.

Su Ming stayed as calm as ever. No anger could be detected on his face. He picked up the pot of wine beside him and poured wine into his cup so that it would fuse with the blood. When the cup was full, he put the pot of wine, picked up the wine cup, and as everyone as everyone stared at him with fear, he drank the blood.

"As expected of a life that loves devouring flesh and blood. When its blood fuses with the wine, the taste becomes even better... It's a pity that there is only one cup. I still haven't had my fill of it."

Su Ming smiled faintly. When he put down his wine cup, he lifted his right hand, then with an indifferent expression, he seized the air in the direction of the corpse again.

As the skeletal man screamed in fear, his body... shuddered. His head was torn off his body for the second time, and it charged to Su Ming. Once Su Ming caught it, he let the blood fall into the cup again. This time, it only filled up three-tenths of it.

'A tyrant!' This was the only word the old man in purple had to describe Su Ming. His domineering attitude made the old man feel apprehensive.

'Ruthless!' This was the most direct word the white-robed young man had for Su Ming. The stranger was a person who would definitely seek revenge for every grievance committed against him while also having a temperamental personality.

The boy hesitated for a moment before he sighed in his heart. Ku Mu's body had turned into fog again, and when it formed once more, his pallor was worse than before. He was even trembling. There was great terror and despair in his eyes.

The boy, thus, had to speak. No matter what, Ku Mu was a friend he had invited to the table.

"Fellow Daoist Su..."

Ku Mu's second head disintegrated in Su Ming's hand, and Su Ming poured wine for himself again. Once he drank it, he savored the taste for a while before shifting his gaze to the boy.

"Since fellow Daoist Ban Bu Zi has spoken, while the taste of the blood wine is good, and I originally intended to take it with me so that my friends and family could enjoy it

when I return home... Oh well. Fill up that cup, and I will forgive you for your rudeness today.”

Su Ming flicked his fingers, and the wine cup immediately flew before Ku Mu.

Be it the boy, the purple-robed old man, or even the white-robed young man, all three of them were outstanding cultivators in this Expanse Cosmos. However, neither of them would have guessed that Su Ming would think of taking Ku Mu with him so that he could constantly use him to drink blood wine.

It could be said that at that moment, Su Ming was like a murderous fiend who donned a human skin. A malicious air that the four people could not see but could sense spread out from him in incredibly thick waves. It had come from Su Ming’s words, actions, and his indifferent expression.

Sometimes, what was seen was not the most terrifying. The malicious air that could not be seen created an even greater cause for wariness. It was the same principle as to how only an evil person could be the cause of other people’s terror.

Ku Mu fell silent. His expression contorted, but he could not hide the terror in his eyes. He could sense the threat of death from Su Ming, which was something that he rarely felt. He had not come across it in a very long time. It reminded him of the feeling he had when he saw the powerful while being weak during the time before his aeon was destroyed.

He gritted his teeth and lifted his right hand. With a flick of his wrist, drops of blood immediately fell down. Each drop caused his heart to ache in pain, because they were the essence of his life he had accumulated after devouring a large amount of flesh and blood through the countless disasters of each aeon.

The drops of blood fell into the cup one by one, and the trio witnessing this scene did not dare to open their mouths. When the cup was completely filled, Ku Mu laughed brokenly and took a few steps back before wrapping his fist in his palm to the group.

“Today, I have been rash. I will leave first. My fellow Daoists, I bid farewell to all of you.”

Once he finished speaking, he intended to leave, but Su Ming spoke up faintly at that moment. “Did I say you could leave?”

“You!” Madness appeared in Ku Mu’s eyes, but it was immediately pushed down.

“You can leave now.”

No resentment could be seen on Ku Mu’s face, but those who knew him understood that it had definitely grown to an incredibly great degree, and the more he hid his

emotions, the stronger they were. They would then grow in him until the day they could erupt.

Ku Mu turned into a long arc that charged out of the cave abode and into the sky. In an instant, he stepped into the galaxy. His expression contorted with ferociousness, and he turned his head around to glare at the planet behind him.

“I, Ku Mu, hereby swear that one day, I will eat all of your family and friends to wash away the humiliation I suffered today!”

Chapter 1339: Three Questions!

Once Ku Mu left, the boy had a slightly complicated look on his face. He naturally knew of Ku Mu’s personality, but no matter what, Ku Mu was a person he had invited, and he could not say anything about it, just stare at Su Ming.

The expression of the old man in purple had already become calm again. He sighed in his heart, thinking that Su Ming was, in the end, not ruthless enough, or else he would not have let Ku Mu flee.

The white-robed man swept his gaze past Su Ming. His expression was calm, and his thoughts could not be seen.

However, this was the first time they came to know Su Ming. They could only gain a superficial understanding of his personality. There was no way for them to come to know what he was really like. If there had been anyone in that cave abode who was familiar with him, they would definitely know that Ku Mu was going to die.

Su Ming lifted his right hand and seized the air. Immediately, the wine cup filled with Ku Mu’s blood landed in his hand. He cast a glance at the blood in it, and the third eye at the center of his brow sparkled. The power of his Curse then fused into the blood.

The blood immediately started boiling. When the boy and the others saw it, their hearts shuddered. The blood flew out of the wine cup and turned into a small, blood-red humanoid in the air.

It looked similar to Ku Mu. Before the group’s eyes, the small humanoid started trembling, and black smoke came from its body. It swiftly engulfed its figure, which was, of course, due to Su Ming’s Curse. In just the span of a few breaths, the small humanoid turned completely black, then shattered with a bang to disappear into wisps of black smoke.

At the same time, as Ku Mu charged through the galaxy with resentment boiling in him, he suddenly jolted. When he lowered his head, he saw black patches covering his withered body. They instantly spread all over him, and to his horror, his body began rotting.

Screams of pain shot into space, and in a few breaths' time, the soul and body of the famous powerful warrior were destroyed!

The boy and the other two guests could not see this, but with their levels of cultivation and experience, they did not have to. When they saw the small, blood-red humanoid turn into black smoke and vanish, they instantly understood what was about to happen.

When they looked at Su Ming, their gazes immediately became different.

"Haha, I haven't managed to introduce fellow Daoist Su Ming to all of you just yet. You must have surely noticed his divine thought earlier. This fellow Daoist of ours has outstanding power, and his origins are a mystery. We should become closer to him."

A smile appeared on the boy's face. He refused to mention even a single word about Ku Mu, and once he finished speaking, he got up and wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming.

The purple-robed old man put on a cordial smile and looked at Su Ming in good faith as well. He wrapped his fist in his palm as a greeting.

The young man in white's expression was no longer icy cold. When he looked at Su Ming, there was respect and admiration on his face. As he wrapped his fist in his palm, he smiled.

Su Ming stood up and wrapped his fist in his palm towards the three people too. Once they greeted each other, the boy served them, and all of them drank the nectar. A pair of graceful women showed up and began dancing, and the atmosphere in the area livened up slightly.

Once they drank three rounds, the purple-robed old man hesitated for a moment before he looked at Su Ming.

"Fellow Daoist Su, you must have... come from another Expanse Cosmos. I do wonder why you came here."

When the boy heard his words, he also looked at Su Ming. He lifted his right hand and swung it. Immediately, the dancing women and the boys around them stepped back, returning the cave abode to silence.

"I came to have a look at the gap leading to the universe beyond. I would like to ask all of you about it," Su Ming said faintly after putting down his wine cup.

“That place is one of the two great areas of mystery in Heaven Lacking Expanse Cosmos,” the purple-robed old man said after a moment of silence.

The young man in white picked up his wine cup and took a sip from it before he added calmly, “That’s right. One of the two great areas of mystery is the gap you mentioned, and the other is the Mothership’s Sacred Wood.”

“I’ve gone to the gap you mentioned several times before, fellow Daoist Su. Once you step through it, you will find a vast universe with no end. There were quite a few fellow Daoists who tried to explore that universe, but once they expanded their search area, no one returned. All of them died...

“There is a wind there that can tear us apart, a fog that can engulf all souls, and countless strange living creatures... though most of them have no intelligence. In fact, they don’t even have corporeal bodies. It’s as if they were born from space.

“They won’t get close to our world...” the boy said, sharing all he knew without keeping anything to himself.

Su Ming pondered over their words and asked, “What is the Mothership’s Sacred Wood?”

The young man in white chose to answer him. “It is a giant log of wood that appeared nobody knows when. There is a natural seal on it that prevents all divine senses from reaching inside. The interior of the log is incredibly suitable for us to sleep, which is why when the time for us to sleep arrives, we go there to sleep.

“Based on different levels of cultivation and physical constitutions, the time we spend sleeping is different. Some need to sleep for thousands of years, and some tens of thousands of years, but whatever it is, the Sacred Wood allows us to cut the time we need to spend sleeping short.

“Fellow Daoist Su, since you are surely another Almighty who has merged with his other self, you should be able to obtain a cave abode in the Sacred Wood as well. Use it as a place to sleep in the future while you wait for the arrival of the next aeon.”

Clearly, they did not know that... there would no longer be another aeon.

“Is there... an old ship here?” Su Ming asked after a moment of silence and swept his gaze over the three people.

The three people’s pupils shrank. No one spoke, causing the area to instantly fall silent. Even the constant rumbles beyond the planet seemed to have disappeared at that moment.

This scene caused a smile to appear at the corners of Su Ming’s lips.

The purple-robed old man let out a few fake coughs before he looked at the boy. The young man in white lowered his head, as if he did not hear Su Ming's question, and a rarely seen look of hesitation appeared on the boy's face.

After a long while, he shook his head towards Su Ming with a bitter smile.

"I know, but I can't tell you. I can only say... that there is a mysterious sect in Heaven Lacking Expanse Cosmos. Its name is Life Extermination Hall.

"If we were to talk about the sect's strength... Even the three of us are just external members. Almost everyone in the Sacred Wood are members of this sect.

"Fellow Daoist Su... you should know a bit of the sect's strength by now."

After saying that much, the boy stopped speaking.

Su Ming nodded. Since the boy treated him with courtesy and there was something keeping him from speaking, Su Ming did not further interrogate him. He stood up and wrapped his fist in his palm towards the three of them.

"If that is the case, I will bid my leave first. If we are fated to meet again... we will see each other again."

After saying that, he turned around, intending to leave, but suddenly, resolve appeared in the boy's eyes, and he took a step forward.

"Fellow Daoist Su, please don't be in a hurry to leave just yet. I have three questions I would like to ask you. If you can provide me the answers, then I, Ban Bu Zi, will risk my life and tell you a few secrets."

Su Ming stopped in his tracks. He turned around and looked at the boy.

The purple-robed old man's expression changed when he heard the boy's words. He looked as if he wanted to leave, but then hesitated. After a moment, he gritted his teeth, lifted his right hand, and swung it at the entrance of the cave abode above them. Fog instantly filled the area and covered the entrance.

As for the young man in white, he did not speak, but his actions spoke of his mind. The sword behind him instantly shot up, but it did not bring with it any killing intent. Instead, it exuded a vast amount of power. When it floated in the fog, millions of souls spread out from the sword. They filled up the area and formed a seal.

At the same time, the boy took a step forward. The cave abode immediately started swaying violently and showed signs of sinking. If anyone was out in the galaxy, they would be able to see that the mountain was devoured by the ground. If that someone stared at it with their will, they would see that a crack had opened up on the back of the

huge living meatball. It swallowed the cave abode and fused it with the meatball so it could use its body to form a seal.

Su Ming's expression remained the same. Not a single change could be detected on him. When the purple-robed old man exuded the fog, he could tell that the old man was not trying to attack him, but wanted to seal the place. Its purpose was to trap the others, ensuring that no divine senses or wills from the outside world could enter.

Su Ming was still staring at the boy. When the boy lifted his right hand, a green log the size of his palm appeared in his hand. He placed it carefully on the table, and when Su Ming looked over, his vision immediately distorted. He could not send his divine sense into the log at all.

"The Sacred Wood?" he asked slowly.

"I obtained it in the Vast Expanse. This is the first time I used it," the boy said solemnly with a nod.

"What are your three questions? You can ask them now."

Su Ming turned away from the Sacred Wood and focused on the boy. By his side, the purple-robed old man and the young man in white sat quietly. Clearly, the two of them knew what the boy wanted to ask.

"This is my first question: Will the disaster that will fall this time mark the end of this aeon... or the end of this Harmonious Morus Alba?" When the boy spoke, he kept a close watch of Su Ming's expression.

"Why do you ask?" Su Ming's expression remained the same, but his regard for the boy grew slightly. A person who could ask this question was definitely no one ordinary.

"Because I went to the Vast Expanse before. I saw... the Harmonious Morus Alba where we live. It is just like what the legends said. It is indeed a butterfly. I also saw... a great amount of aura of death about it, and it's grown especially strong in this aeon. Its aura of death reminds me of someone who is about to die!

"The reason I ask this of you is because you are clearly different from us. You are a person of this current aeon, and if you are the strongest in this aeon, then you have clearly surpassed the strongest of any aeon before yours. I base it on the principle of how all things are born and how they die; only when a life is about to die will its strongest power born from a sort of madness would reveal itself!

"If you aren't the strongest of this aeon, then this... will be even scarier," the boy said in anguish.

Su Ming was silent for a moment before he sighed softly. "It will mark the end of this aeon, and the end of this Harmonious Morus Alba."

Chapter 1340: A Plea for Their Legacy

"It's just as I expected..." the boy said in anguish.

He looked at the purple-robed old man and the young man in white, but the two of them were silent.

Once a person reached their level of cultivation, had lived for an incredibly long time, and had gained an insight towards life and death, they would more or less no longer be that concerned about living and dying.

What they cared about... was their level of cultivation. Perhaps the end of their lives could no longer be changed, but once they reached their particular level of cultivation, their obsession towards the path of cultivation would have long become their greatest desire.

They were no longer living for the sake of living. The state of being alive was simply the most basic need for them to continue training in the path of cultivation, which was the reason they had fallen silent at that moment.

There were few among those who had lived for so long who would be afraid of dying, but most of them knew that they had not reached the limits of their cultivation. Because of that, they would be unwilling to accept the fact that they did not have enough years to live. This was the main reason why they would not want to die.

"So, we only have a few hundred years left, huh?" The young man in white smiled. There was no anguish in his smile. Instead, a hint of determination appeared in it.

"A few hundred years..."

The purple-robed old man sighed softly. He still had plenty of things he wanted to do, but he had too little time left. To them, a few hundred years was equivalent to a few days for a mortal.

"Since everything is about to be destroyed, then even if I leave behind my phala [1] and all the legacy of my cultivation, I still won't have a chance... to keep it, but I will still try!"

The purple-robed old man also had a determined look. The domineering air spreading out from his body at that moment was incredibly distinct. It was clearly a presence of someone who was fearless in the face of true disaster.

The boy, the purple-robed old man, and the young man in white were incredibly good friends. They had been together for many aeons, and the friendship formed through the course of such a long time allowed them to go through all storms together.

As for the old Ku Mu, it was clear that he had not been on very good terms with the three, or else the event before would have never happened. If the purple-robed old man or the young man in white had been in his place, the boy would surely have stopped them.

This was something Su Ming had deduced based on how everyone had descended, the expressions they had on their faces when they did so, and how they had spoken to each other. It was also why he had attacked so ruthlessly and without hesitation just then. He had wanted to intimidate them.

The three did not show any signs of not trusting what Su Ming said. After all, they had spoken about this beforehand, and they had formed their own speculations. Su Ming's arrival and his power, which so obviously surpassed theirs, could only come from one logical explanation.

Besides, they had lived for many years, and they each had their own judgments. They... would not doubt Su Ming's words.

"This is my second question: I would like to ask... how confident are you in surviving this disaster that will truly destroy everything?"

The boy looked at Su Ming when he spoke. Upon hearing his words, the purple-robed old man and the young man in white looked over at Su Ming as well while waiting for his answer.

Su Ming was silent for a long while before he answered slowly, "About half,"

"Is it five-tenths or..."

When the boy heard his words, he formed an answer in his heart, but even so, he still wanted to verify it, and his voice could no longer remain calm.

"Half of one-tenth," Su Ming answered while looking at the boy.

Once he said that, the trio immediately fell silent. Su Ming did not attempt to hide the truth. He was indeed only half of one-tenth confident that he could live through the disaster.

“What method will you try to attempt living? Are you going to the Vast Expanse?” the boy asked after a moment of thoughtful silence.

“But the universe is boundless, and the fog and lives in it have great strength. It’s impossible for us to survive there for long. In just a hundred years, we would surely die,” the purple-robed old man said calmly with a sigh in his heart.

His words were true. Even with Su Ming’s level of cultivation, it would be impossible for him to survive for long in the Vast Expanse...

Unless he attained great completion in Avacaniya Realm. Once he reached that stage, he would have the right to move in the Vast Expanse, just like the nine Harmonious Morus Albas.

Su Ming sighed softly. He then swept his gaze past the three people and said slowly, “It is one of the choices.”

“Fellow Daoist, do you have other alternatives? Do you mind telling us?” the boy said with a grim expression.

“The second alternative is to make my own level of cultivation reach the level of this Harmonious Morus Alba, but even so, I would still only have half of one-tenth of a chance to survive while in the universe beyond, which is much more dangerous than the disaster.

“The third alternative is something I sensed vaguely in this universe when I received an epiphany some time ago. Perhaps countless years later, or perhaps countless years before, or perhaps in a place incredibly far from here, there was another world.

“I once sent the souls of a race called the Mourning-Death Soul into that world, and they brought with them my Curse, but I don’t know whether that world truly exists or not. Perhaps all of it was fake... but perhaps, it truly exists.

“I will send the people who are most important to me into that world I cannot be certain exists with my blessing, but this choice... is the last choice.

“Because I cannot be certain whether that world truly exists. Once they enter that place, will they still be them? Will they still have their memories intact? Will we... be able to meet again?” Su Ming said slowly, and there was a melancholic tone the trio could sense in his words.

They fell silent again.

“You’ve finished asking the three questions, right? If you don’t want to talk about Life Extermination Hall, then it’s fine... I will take my leave now. If we are fated to meet

again, perhaps we will. Fellow Daoist, thank you for your nectar." Su Ming wrapped his fist in his palm towards the trio.

"Fellow Daoist Su!" the boy said.

When Su Ming looked towards him, he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply towards him. Stern looks appeared on the purple-robed old man and the young man in white's faces, and they wrapped their fists in their palms. They too bowed deeply to Su Ming.

"It's not something I cannot say. The ancient ship is ever at one spot, and that is beside the gap leading to the Vast Expanse, but it will occasionally hide itself. However, I can be certain that it's there.

When the boy lifted his head, determination appeared on his face. He did not hesitate in his speech. "As for Old Man Extermination... He always sits on the ancient ship!"

Su Ming looked at him. It might have been the first time they met, but the feeling the boy gave Su Ming was very unique. He was a powerful warrior who came from an ancient aeon and who possessed great wisdom.

"Thank you." Su Ming nodded.

"I do not deserve your thanks. I would like to ask you to promise me something as well, fellow Daoist Su..."

There was resolve in the boy's determination. When he spoke, he looked at Su Ming with expectation in his eyes.

"My Dao is different from other people's. Among the cultivators over the countless aeons in this universe, my Dao... is one of a kind! My Dao is born from my epiphany. In it, the world, the universe, this Harmonious Morus Alba, and all lives contain two forms. When all people close their eyes, everything is reduced to nothingness. They are pellets no one can see.

"When everyone open their eyes, the pellets instantly gather together and turn into this world.

"This is my Dao, and it is also the origin of my Daoist monastic name. My only wish is that the legacy of my Dao will not end with me. Fellow Daoist Su, please agree... to send my Dao into that world that may or may not exist. Let it have hope in that place!"

The boy's expression was grim. When he spoke, he bowed deeply to Su Ming again.

"It's the same for me. Fellow Daoist Su, please fulfill my request. Please send my legacy, which is the accumulation of all my epiphanies and my cultivation into the world that may or may not exist!"

The purple-robed old man swung his arm, and he too wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply to Su Ming.

"Since the two of them have already decided to do this, then I also do not wish to have lived in vain. If that world truly exists, I wish the will of my sword will have a legacy as well. If it doesn't exist... then it's fine that everything that I have done will return to dust."

The young man in white smiled, but a resolute glint appeared in his eyes. He wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to Su Ming.

"Have you thought about this properly?"

Su Ming looked at the people who had wrapped their fists in their palms towards him, then sighed in his heart. The trio did not care about their lives, but they could not afford to not care about the legacy of their cultivation. It was why before the destruction, they wanted to fight for their survival.

"There's no need to think!" The boy lifted his head and stared at Su Ming.

Su Ming was silent for a while before he made his decision. The three had gained his respect. "Alright. I don't know how long I'll be in this Expanse Cosmos. The shortest will be several months, but perhaps I will stay longer... Three months later, I will come to this place again, and I will execute my divine ability to send your legacy items into that world,"

"If there are others..." The boy hesitated for a moment.

"As long as they are as determined as you are, then even if I have to spend some of my cultivation base, I will help all of you, but I cannot guarantee whether that world exists once I send your legacies over, and I cannot guarantee whether your legacies will change if that world truly exists."

Su Ming looked at the boy while speaking, then nodded at the other two as well. Once he wrapped his fist in his palm towards them, he turned around and walked towards the sealed entrance of the cave abode above him. In the blink of an eye, he disappeared.

When Su Ming left, only the boy and his two friends were left. They were silent for a moment before the purple-robed old man let loose a long sigh. More wrinkles appeared on his face.

"I have to go back and prepare the Brand of my legacy. I will take my leave now. A few hundred years..."

The purple-robed old man shook his head, then once he wrapped his fist in his palm, he stepped out of the entrance.

The young man in white did not say anything. He only nodded to the boy and left as well.

When the boy was the only one left in the cave abode, he slowly sat down beside the table, picked up his wine cup, and drank. The determination on his face grew stronger.

‘Only hundreds of years, huh? If I could personally witness the destruction, then even if I died... I would not have lived my life in vain! But the only difference between me and the others is my legacy... It contains my epiphany and also the legacy of my life.

‘I wonder... how the children who have my legacy will look like when they are sent to that world that may or may not exist. I wonder if they will remember that an ancestor of theirs existed here?’

The boy drank all of his wine in one gulp while full of anguish. The wine was spicy, but the sweetness at the end was like time and the vicissitudes of life...

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1341: A Mistake is Required - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1341: A Mistake is Required Bin

Chapter 1341: A Mistake is Required

When the three black-robed men called up many clones with Su Ming’s appearance and stirred up waves of resentment with their slaughter in Saint Defier’s camp, Xuan Jiu, one of the three lords, had already turned into a puddle of black water.

When Fei Hua opened her eyes, anguish appeared on her face. She did not need to touch her face to sense that her life force was about to be extinguished. Even so, she still had one thousand years left to her.

However... her looks could no longer be seen. Her face was old, and her dark locks had turned white. It looked like too much of her life had been extracted from her, and she had withered like an old flower.

Fei Hua sighed softly. There was little reluctance to part with her looks in her heart. The calmness of her personality allowed her to just accept it. Scheming against the powerful warrior from Arid Triad she had never seen before was something she had not agreed to, but the other two had joined their hands, and she then gave silent consent to it.

When she stood up slowly, she saw Xiao Song open his eyes on the other altar. He was no longer as handsome as before, but he did not appear old, like Fei Hua. Instead, he looked like a mummy. So much of his life force had been extracted that it looked like he was rotting away, as if he had just crawled out of a coffin after having been buried for several months.

A foul stench spread out. Then, Xiao Song's incredibly shrill screams filled the area. Every part of him hurt, as if countless insects were tearing into his flesh and squirming inside. Even his soul felt like that. Under the intense pain, his originally rotting cultivation base was heavily damaged, causing his mind to become muddled. It was as if... he had gone mad.

As he screamed in pain, he flew up swiftly, and with his voice echoing shrilly in space, he charged into the distance.

"It hurts... It hurts!"

His voice gradually turned into lingering notes in space. When they slowly disappeared, Fei Hua lowered her head in silence. The three of them had lost completely. Xuan Jiu died, Xiao Song went mad, and as for her... she lost her looks. Even though her level of cultivation had not changed much, she had only one thousand years left to live.

In the end, Fei Hua sighed. She then cast a glance at the area around her and walked into space. She was tired, and she wanted to finish the journey of her life quietly in her hometown.

"Perhaps I will not be able to wait until he arrives... He never cared about me to begin with. He only ever cared about my sister..." Fei Hua shook her head in anguish, then went into the distance.

In the meantime, the bald crane was smugly rebuking Yan Pei in Dark Dawn's camp. It was also boasting about itself, but Yan Pei was distracted. He would occasionally train his eyes on Zi Ruo, who was daydreaming in the distance, while he wondered just what exactly had happened in Old Man Extermination's tomb.

As the bald crane spoke, its heart suddenly clenched in pain for some unknown reason. Its words instantly came to a halt. When it lifted its head, it stared at the galaxy with a blank look on its face. It was looking in the direction of Saint Defier's camp, and confusion appeared in its eyes.

A faint image took shape in its mind. The picture had a woman who was staring at a handsome young man beside her with a smile. The two of them stared into each other's eyes and did not notice a black crane in the distance staring at the young man with jealousy on its face. Standing beside the black crane was a teenage girl. She caressed the black crane's feathers gently, looking innocent and naive.

The scene brought confusion to the bald crane's heart, causing it to instinctively raise its claws to scratch its face fiercely. Once it shook its body, the image disappeared, and the bald crane suddenly decided that it was no longer in the mood to talk to Yan Pei.

It suddenly had an urge to go to Saint Defier's camp. It did not know what it wanted to do there, but it grew stronger with every passing moment. In the end, it chose to leave. Yan Pei looked at it with a stunned expression, but the bald crane ignored him and turned into a long arc that charged through the galaxy.

.....

Harmonious Morus Alba's fourth wing, or what the boy called Heaven Lacking Expanse Cosmos had a very direct name. Perhaps the people who lived in it did not see a missing part in the heavens, but there were those who knew of the existence of a gap.

If anyone compared the galaxy to the heavens, then that heaven... was indeed lacking.

Su Ming rushed towards the gap in the heavens, which he had seen with his will previously. He did not cast a glance at the unfamiliar galaxy. It might be Harmonious Morus Alba's Expanse Cosmos, but it was not Su Ming's homeland.

Once he found Tian Xie Zi and the others, he would not stay around. He also had the same feeling in regards to Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. He would return to his homeland, to Ninth Summit, and when he was there... he would live through the final few hundred years and prevent what he saw in Heavenly Incense Rune from becoming a reality.

'I need Old Man Extermination to make a fatal mistake. As long as he does it, then no matter what his final plan is, that mistake... will foreshadow his defeat! If he makes no mistakes, then I will make him!'

Su Ming rushed forward calmly. He had already grown used to the loud rumbles around him. He did not seem to move fast, but with his power, before long, he appeared at the spot the boy had mentioned, which was also the place Su Ming had seen with his will—the gap leading to the Vast Expanse.

From the distance, the borders of the tear were not uniform. There was nothing beyond the gap, only the gray of the universe. It had no bounds, and thin fog tumbled about as if hiding some secret within it.

The closer Su Ming got, the thicker the presence of the universe beyond became. If he was a normal cultivator, then at that moment, his cultivation base would get jammed greatly. Only powerful warriors like the boy could persevere and step into the Vast Expanse to see the world outside.

With a calm expression, Su Ming walked near the gap. He stood there and stared at the Vast Expanse in silence.

Based on what the boy had said, the ancient ship was hidden there. Based on that, it was not hard to imagine that perhaps... Old Man Extermination was also looking at him.

"You don't want to meet me, huh?" Su Ming said faintly. "Perhaps you think that it is not time yet."

Su Ming turned around and looked at space with his back turned towards the gap.

Old Man Extermination was sitting on the ancient ship hidden in space and also looking at Su Ming. They seemed to be in different worlds, but their gazes met.

"Since you don't want to show yourself, I won't force you either," Su Ming said slowly. As his voice echoed in the air, it did not drown out the rumbling bangs. Instead, his words seemed to fuse with them, making it hard to hear him clearly.

"But..."

Su Ming lifted his left hand and lowered his head to cast a glance at his palm lines. Slowly, he clenched his left hand before he slowly unfurled his palm towards a spot in space, as if he was pushing at it.

The loud rumbles that seemed like they would echo eternally in space instantly fell into true silence. At that moment, all sounds in the Expanse Cosmos disappeared.

It lasted for about three breaths. After them, everything returned to normal, as if nothing had happened. Su Ming pulled back his left hand. He did not say anything more and turned around, taking a swift step towards the Vast Expanse.

His target at the gap was Old Man Extermination, but since he hid himself, it was clear that he did not wish to meet Su Ming. With that being the case... Su Ming would have to try achieving his other goal.

And that was... to test just how dangerous and treacherous was the so-called Vast Expanse, where Harmonious Morus Alba flew. Su Ming wanted to personally experience it and... to see Harmonious Morus Alba, in which he lived, from the outside!

With a step forward, Su Ming turned into a long arc. With determination in his heart, he closed in on the gap. In a flash... he rushed out of Harmonious Morus Alba for the first time in his life and stepped into the universe beyond.

During that moment, ripples appeared in his calm heart. He could not describe that feeling. It was a form of transcendence, of ascension, where he stepped into a place that was truly unfamiliar to him!

After all, what he sensed in the Art of Time and what he sensed with his own body was different.

The instant Su Ming stepped into the Vast Expanse, the eyes of Old Man Extermination shone on the ancient ship beside the gap. When he lowered his head, he saw a clear palm print on the wooden plate at the bow of the ship.

That palm print was very distinct, but when he looked at it closely, he felt that he could not see the palm lines clearly. However, Old Man Extermination could sense a wave of murderous aura within the palm print at first glance.

It was so thick that it was almost corporeal. There was a threat in it, and even Old Man Extermination could not overlook it, because Su Ming had gained an epiphany that allowed him to reach a state at which he could pose a threat to him.

It was just a palm print. Even if the meaning contained in was ignored, just its appearance alone spoke volumes. It showed that Su Ming could find the hidden ancient ship!

The threat contained in the palm print and the powerful presence spreading out from it passed over Su Ming's silent words.

He had chosen a signal that could only transfer meaning.

'Don't provoke you, huh?' Old Man Extermination mumbled, and his lips curled up into a cold sneer.

'You are just a life that has lived through half an era of this aeon. As expected, a fool. Even if you have reached a high level of cultivation, your mind is still immature.'

'Is this supposed to be effective... If you think I will truly stop provoking you just because of your threat, then besides being ludicrous, you are plain ridiculous.'

'And I say you are a fool because of this palm print. Su Ming, you have practically delivered me a sword that can kill you!'

As Old Man Extermination stared at the palm print, a smile appeared at the corners of his lips. He lifted his right hand, swung his arm, and the indistinctiveness of the palm print was forcefully chased away to reveal Su Ming's palm lines!

'With these palm lines, I will no longer need your blood.'

A flash of dark light shone in Old Man Extermination's eyes. He naturally had a method to check whether the palm lines were real.

Chapter 1342: The Vast Expanse

The word vast means something immense and boundless, and the word expanse means all existing matter and space as a whole. When the two words are grouped together, they meant that there is no end to the universe.

The expanse encompasses the galaxy, the heavens, space itself, and hence... it was the Vast Expanse beyond the gap.

Su Ming had no idea just how big it was. He believed that even the black-robed young man on the Feng Shui compass did not know just how far the Vase Expanse extended.

It was different from the galaxy. The instant Su Ming stepped out of Harmonious Morus Alba's universe, he felt a weight suddenly press down on him. It was as if a mountain had landed on his shoulders. That mountain was heavy, making it hard for him to breathe. He felt a slight discomfort.

In fact, he felt as if there were invisible shackles on his limbs, which made his movements slightly jerky when he lifted his feet.

There was also a thin fog around him. Su Ming sensed a certain degree of danger from it. It seemed like the fog could devour life and destroy all signs of it.

In silence, Su Ming lifted his right hand and touched the thin fog. His hand began to rot. In fact, gray also appeared at his fingertips, as if he was about to turn to ash. But soon, as Su Ming circulated his cultivation base, his finger reached a state of balance with the world around him.

'If this is what happened even at my level of cultivation, then people in the middle stage of Avanicaya Realm can stay here for dozens of years while those in the initial stage of Avacaniya Realm... would die in half a year. As for those below Avacaniya Realm... once they stepped into the Vast Expanse, they would instantly be destroyed.

'And...'

Su Ming frowned. He did not sense any signs of will or power that could allow him to restore his cultivation base in the Vast Expanse, which would mean that... he could not restore his cultivation base in the Vast Expanse. The amount he used up would be the amount he was not getting back.

Most cultivator could not bear it. But to Su Ming, this was not something unfamiliar. After all, be it when he was in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence or the world in All Spirits Hall, he had experienced something similar there.

Su Ming knew well how to use his power in places where he only had a limited supply of his cultivation base. He could do it to an ingenious level... but besides that, while Su Ming did not spread his will through the Vast Expanse, he could still sense it constantly fading.

Based on the rate it flowed away from him, in about a hundred years, his will would completely disappear, as if devoured by the Vast Expanse.

Su Ming let out a soft sigh. Most of his thoughts of avoiding the disaster in the Vast Expanse disappeared. It was not a place where cultivators could exist.

Besides, the thin fog around him was the most common thing. There were also quite a number of existences that even he would need to be wary of, such as vortices and the strange lives that lived in the Vast Expanse.

Perhaps others would not quite understand it, but Su Ming had survived an encounter with the black-robed man in the past. He had seen the mysteries and the terrifying aspects of the Vast Expanse.

When he experienced them with his body, that feeling became even deeper in his heart.

Su Ming remained in pensive silence for a moment before a glint appeared in his eyes that shone with resolution. With a single move, he turned into a long arc and charged into the distance. He was not a person who would easily give up on his choices. He had three paths to take under the threat of the destructive disaster, and he would not give up on any one of them due to a rash assessment.

If the Vast Expanse was inhabitable and people could live in it, it would mean that Su Ming had found a way for his friends and family to live through the disaster.

But he was not certain as to whether Cang Lan and the others could leave Harmonious Morus Alba Expanse Cosmos. After all, their levels of cultivation were not high. Over the years, their experiences and the serendipities they received were different, so their levels of cultivation had grown far apart.

Su Ming had no way of dealing with this. Forcefully increasing their levels of cultivation was only a temporary solution, and he could not make it so that everyone arrived in Avacaniya Realm.

Yet no matter what, the Vast Expanse... was one of the three paths. If he found proof that this plan was executable, then he could think of ways to solve other problems.

With a resolute gaze, Su Ming charged forward and disappeared into the seemingly thin fog that was actually very thick.

As Su Ming left into the distance, the thin fog formed gray marks on his body. They expanded until they practically covered every single part of his body, but once he made his cultivation base reach an equilibrium with the fog, he was perfectly fine even though he looked as if he had died.

If the boy was in his place right then, he would not dare to leave too far into the distance even though he had stepped into the Vast Expanse several times. Instead, he would only move around the area near the gap. Even so, every single time he headed out, he made lots of preparations, and the fog still damaged him greatly. Practically every one hundred breaths, he would need to swallow medicinal cores and forcefully circulate his cultivation base to regulate his breathing.

He was not like Su Ming, who did not stop at all while he charged forward.

Su Ming continued until a glint shone in his eyes. He brought his right hand up and seized the fog to his right. With it, the fog in that region immediately shrank, and a face with three eyes showed up. That face was an illusion which shone with a dark light. It had a ferocious expression, but it gave off a feeling that it possessed no intelligence.

It let out a piercing roar and charged towards Su Ming. He did not hesitate and grabbed it swiftly. With a bang, the face was torn to pieces, but it did not dissipate. Instead, it turned into a dozen portions that charged back at him.

Su Ming frowned. He might not have used his full strength in the attack just then, but he could have killed a cultivator in the initial stage of Avacaniya Realm with it. Yet in the Vast Expanse, he could not even kill the strange life form.

He snorted coldly, then in the face of the dozen faces charging towards him, he swung his arm. This time, he used his will, and as his sleeve fluttered in space, booming sounds rang out in the Vast Expanse. The dozen faces let out shrill screams of pain and disappeared into the wind.

But Su Ming's expression grew darker. Even though he had noticed that his will was dissipating, he did not expect that the instant he used it, the speed at which it dissipated would become one hundred times faster.

Based on that, in one year... his great will would wither away.

And Su Ming had to use the peak of the power of those in the initial stage of Avacaniya Realm to kill the strange life form. It was also clear that its kind was not rare in the fog...

Su Ming was silent for a moment before he sighed in his heart. There was no longer any need for him to check around. The Vast Expanse... was completely unsuitable for cultivators, because even he could only stay in it for some time. If he was forced to stay for a longer period of time, he would die.

In silence, Su Ming turned around to go back to the butterfly. From the distance, he could only see a wing that was slanted diagonally upwards. It exuded a presence that was completely different from the Vast Expanse.

The wing was so big that Su Ming could not see the end of it.

Looking at something from a different angle would cause the size of something to be different as well. When Su Ming had seen the butterfly through the Art of Time, it hadn't seemed too big. When he saw Harmonious Morus Alba's ancient memories under its guidance, it was the same. Back then, the butterflies looked to be only the size of a baby's palm.

Yet what he saw right then was so huge that it could not be described with words.

Su Ming stood frozen in a daze and stared at the huge butterfly before him. He could not see how it looked like, just its fourth wing. In fact, he could not even fully see the fourth wing.

It was difficult for him to put what he felt into words. It was an incredibly complicated feeling, and there was a strange sentimentality in him. He could see the aura of death on the butterfly, and it was so thick that he would probably feel it even if he was very far away.

He wondered if that thick aura of death had attracted the strange life forms in the Vast Expanse around him, causing a distorted dark shadow that looked like a soul to appear once the fog gathered together.

A determined look suddenly appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He still did not want to give up on the path of trying to survive in the Vast Expanse. Even if his efforts would end in vain and he would even have to pay a certain price for his perseverance, he still... wanted to see just how big the Vast Expanse was, how many strange life forms it had... and see Harmonious Morus Alba in its entirety from another angle!

His determination at that moment was similar to when he had willingly swallowed a large amount of medicinal herbs so that he could rush out of the house sealed by his elder to help Dark Mountain Tribe, when he persisted to use the grass dolls to record the faces he did not want to forget even though his emotions had been sealed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and when he had picked himself up after falling into depression once he learned that Su Xuan Yi was not his family and wanted him dead.

That was all his determination. If he was not determined, it would have been impossible for him to survive for that long. If he was not determined, Su Ming... would no longer be Su Ming. He would not have reached his level of cultivation and would have been an average person in a sea of people in the universe.

With determination, Su Ming chose to do something that he should perhaps not do in the Vase Expanse... He spread out his will completely.

It was just like what he had declared in his mind: He wanted to take a look at the butterfly!

It was similar to what the Elder of the Berserkers had said—that he could see a world no one else could see when he predicted the Berserker Day!

Su Ming longed to see a world no one else could see when he lifted his head to look at the galaxy!

At that instant, when he spread his will outwards, countless shrill roars suddenly rang out in the Vast Expanse. At the same time, the fog tumbled swiftly, as if Su Ming's will was a lamp in the dark. When it shone brilliantly, it was deemed as something that should not exist in it!

Su Ming... saw it!

He saw thousands of strange life forms in the Vase Expanse and... that the universe truly had no end, extending beyond the area his will could cover. Su Ming also saw... Harmonious Morus Alba's complete body!

It was a beautiful butterfly with all four of its wings standing erect. At that moment... they were only a sliver away from overlapping. At first glance, it was even difficult to see the crack between them!

Chapter 1343: The World of Specters

While staring at the huge butterfly that was Harmonious Morus Alba through his will, Su Ming fell silent. The life forms resembling specters beside him felt like it was their chance, and they instantly charged at him.

But the instant one of them drew close, Su Ming seized that specter's neck with his left hand, which he had brought up at some unknown point of time. No matter how the specter struggled, it could not free itself. It could only let out faint shrieks.

Su Ming did not look at the specter he captured. He only stared at Harmonious Morus Alba, and after a long while, he sighed softly. He swiftly recalled his will. During that short period of time, some of his great will had dissipated, but Su Ming did not pay any heed to it. With the specter in hand, he walked forward with a calm expression, and perhaps it was due to his will filling the area just then, or perhaps it was because of the

specter he captured in his hand, but wherever he went, the strange life forms gradually surrounded him.

They kept close, but did not dare to pounce on him. Instead, when Su Ming stepped forward, they immediately moved backwards. From the distance, even though Su Ming did not release any sort of killing intent, once those hundreds of strange life forms surrounded him, he gained an air of looking down on the entire world. When he stepped forward, all lives moved back.

When Su Ming approached the gap in Harmonious Morus Alba's wing, he stopped for a moment and turned around slowly to cast a cold glance at the strange life forms staring at him from behind.

He did not speak, and he still did not harbor any killing intent. However, under his aloof gaze, the hundreds of strange life forms shuddered. They had long since noticed that this life that had walked out of the butterfly was completely different from all the others they remembered. The person before them... was stronger, and he was so strong that he reminded them of the more ferocious existences further in the universe.

The specter in Su Ming's hand struggled even more furiously at that moment. It might not have a lot of intelligence, but its survival instincts told it that if it was brought into the gap, it would definitely die.

Because of that, the specter screamed shrilly. His voice made the hundreds of strange life forms restless, but under Su Ming's gaze, they did not dare approach. Instead, they started screaming shrilly with the specter.

The sound formed by hundreds of strange life forms screaming together immediately echoed in the universe. It was something that had never happened before. The sound traveled forth in a method Su Ming could not understand, and spread through an unknown distance, causing the thin fog in the area to tumble... as if their cries were some sort of summon, a plea for help!

A barely discernible glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. He had his back turned to the gap and was no longer in a hurry to step inside. He wanted to see what sort of existence would be called over by the screams.

The voice of the specter in Su Ming's hand grew shriller. In fact, Su Ming made it scream harder by relaxing his grip slightly before he squeezed down. After doing it, the specter's screams instantly turned several times shriller. At the same time, the hundreds of strange life forms also seemed to have sensed it and let out screams that even Su Ming found piercing to the ears.

It made Su Ming narrow his eyes slightly.

‘Could it be that the strange life forms in the universe have some form of connection between them that makes them feel what the other is feeling?’

As Su Ming observed them, he suddenly raised his head and looked into the distance.

When he did so, the strange life forms shuddered and spread out to reveal a path. Immediately after, the thin fog disappeared, allowing Su Ming to see ... a huge object in the distance.

It was big compared to Su Ming, but if it was compared to Harmonious Morus Alba, it would be insignificant. It was simply a huge specter that was thousands of feet tall!

A terrifying presence spread out from it. Its eyes were red, but it did not possess much intelligence either. However, its madness and its instincts to murder spread out along with its presence, forming a mighty pressure that made even Su Ming’s pupils shrink.

The specter was an existence that had reached the peak of the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm. With just one more step, it could step into the later stage of Avacaniya Realm, but the difficulty of taking that step was the same as crossing a huge ravine in one step. During the countless aeons in Harmonious Morus Alba, besides Su Ming, only Arid Triad had found a method to reach that stage. From that, the difficulty of reaching that stage could be seen.

As the huge specter drew close, the strange life forms around Su Ming all moved back as if they did not dare to be close to it. There seemed to be a rigid order in which they had to conduct themselves based on the differences of their levels of cultivation.

When the huge specter stopped, it stared at Su Ming with its red eyes, then let out a roar that shook the universe around them. Su Ming let out a cold harrumph, but he did not move back. Instead, he headed forward. With the specter in hand, he turned into a long arc and charged towards the huge specter.

It might not be weak, but it was still in the middle stage of Avacaniya Realm. Even if it had reached the peak... it was still not in the later stage!

When it saw that Su Ming was about to close in, the huge specter roared and opened its mouth wide. The universe around it immediately froze for a moment, and signs of it about to collapse swiftly appeared. A huge vortex instantly appeared, and with a huge force that could suck in everything, it enveloped Su Ming.

At the same time, the specter lifted its right hand, and with a swing, it gained sharp claws that charged towards Su Ming. The aura they stirred up could destroy a cultivator in the initial stage of Avacaniya Realm.

Su Ming’s expression remained calm. When the space collapsed and the vortex appeared, he lifted his foot and took a light step forward. With it, rumbling sounds

immediately rang out, and the huge vortex disintegrated. Then, Su Ming lifted his left hand, and, in a very casual manner, struck the incoming specter's claws through space.

Even though Su Ming's body was very small compared to that of the specter, his strike made a small region of the universe let out a loud bang. The specter's huge claws came to a pause, then crumbled right before his eyes.

"You overestimated yourself."

When Su Ming spoke flatly, he lifted his foot. When it landed, he stood on top of the huge specter's head. He brought his right hand up again, then quickly pushed against the top of the huge specter's head!

The specter let out a roar that shook the sky and earth. In an instant, it started disintegrating on its own, causing Su Ming's strike to miss, and hundreds of specters appeared around him.

They let out a shrill scream together. The piercing sound instantly turned into invisible arrows that struck towards Su Ming. If they landed on him, then no matter how strong Su Ming's physical body was, he would still be affected rather badly, but a hint of scorn appeared in Su Ming's eyes at that moment.

When the arrows closed in on him, he spread his will through the area. It crashed against the incoming arrows, and an incredibly loud sound erupted in space. It formed a wave of impact that swept outwards and made the hundreds of specters instantly tumble backwards.

"Time reversal!"

Su Ming's attack was smooth and clean. He did not hesitate. The moment the hundreds of specters tumbled backwards, he brought his left hand up and drew a circle before he pushed it forward.

The hundreds of specters immediately shuddered and stopped falling backwards. Instead, they swiftly drew closer to one another before they merged into the huge specter again, and Su Ming... stood on top of the specter's head. He brought his left hand up and pushed down once more.

The specter jolted. At the same time, Su Ming's great will surged into the huge specter's body through his palm. He wanted to investigate how the strange life forms born in the Vast Expanse could survive.

What were their body structures?

The huge specter was without a doubt much more fitting specimen for Su Ming to find the answer he wanted compared to the weak life forms. It would give him a better understanding of their structure.

Su Ming's will swept through the huge specter's body inch by inch. What he sensed was a vast expanse of emptiness, and it was not that much different from the world outside. However, he could not see just how strong the huge specter was or how it managed to survive in the Vast Expanse.

As he continued researching, Su Ming scowled.

He had already scanned the specter several times, but he did not discover anything. This was clearly not normal. Su Ming snorted coldly, and a blinding light shone in his eyes. The power of his will instantly increased. The wills of the four Great True Worlds descended on him simultaneously, making Su Ming's investigations of the huge specter's body much more detailed.

This might have seemed to have taken a long time, but in truth, the entire process was over in several blinks.

When Su Ming sent all his will over and began searching through the huge specter... he narrowed his eyes, and in fact, there was even a hint of shock in them.

He saw... a universe that had almost been formed in the huge specter's body!

It was an almost complete universe. It had a galaxy, cultivation planets... so the only thing lacking were lives!

If there were lives, that universe would be complete. Even though it was not big, it formed a self-sustaining cycle.

The instant Su Ming's will descended in the huge specter's universe, it shuddered, and began showing signs of crumbling. Then, it fell apart. At that instant, the huge specter let out a shrill scream of pain. Its huge body contorted under Su Ming's palm... and in the blink of an eye, it was reduced to ash.

Su Ming lifted his head. His expression was slightly grim. The hundreds of life forms in the area were stunned. In a moment, all of them fell back and no longer dared to approach.

In fact, even the specter in Su Ming's hand no longer screamed. It just shuddered.

Chapter 1344: With an Epiphany, the Universe is Shocked!

Su Ming was silent for a moment before he swept his gaze over the area. When he looked away, his expression turned calm. He took a step forward and walked towards the fourth wing's gap with the specter in his hand.

He drew closer to the gap, but even up to the moment he stepped into the gap, no other strange life form appeared behind him. The battle seemed to have turned Su Ming into that area's master in the hearts of the strange life forms.

Only when Su Ming stepped into the gap did the specter in his hand struggle weakly. When he entered Harmonious Morus Alba's universe, the specter started shuddering, and its body distorted as if it was about to be wiped off. A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and he pushed outwards with his right hand. Immediately, the specter was sent out of the gap and appeared in the Vast Expanse.

The specter who escaped death by luck was stunned beyond the gap. It might not have much intelligence, but it knew that it had been about to die just then. It then looked at Su Ming, who was still in the gap.

As it watched him, a hint of respect appeared in the specter's eyes. Then, it turned around and disappeared without a trace.

Su Ming watched the specter disappear while deep in thought. The lives in the Vast Expanse did not possess much intelligence, but they had the most basic instincts, and while Su Ming had noticed the respect, he was still a little uncertain. Based on how all lives with intelligence acted, hatred was always much easier to come by compared to gratitude.

Lives who only had instincts could hate, but if they wanted to learn how to be grateful, they needed intelligence for that. When Su Ming fell into pensive silence over that, a thought suddenly appeared in his mind. He suddenly remembered seeing distortions that seemed to resemble death when the specter was brought into Harmonious Morus Alba's universe.

'Could it be that the reason they gathered around the near-dead Harmonious Morus Alba is because this place can help them gain intelligence?

'And that huge specter had a universe in its body! It might not have any lives in it, but I can tell that if it reached the later stage of Avacaniya, life forms might appear in it.

'But there's also a possibility that it would still be impossible even after it reached the later stage. It might only be able to do so once it attained great completion! No matter what sort of level of cultivation it needs before it could make lives appear in its universe... the lives born in the Vast Expanse are the same as Harmonious Morus Alba. They can create their own universes!

'If this guess holds true, then could it be that the black-robed young man also has a universe in him? And by the looks of it, his universe would be much larger than Harmonious Morus Alba's!'

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes when the bold assumption took shape in his mind.

'A universe... Countless mortals look at the blue skies and white clouds on their planets. They watch the sun and moon take each other's places and live through their short lives. It's impossible for them to know that perhaps the universe where they live... is within a strange life form's body in the Vast Expanse.

'All schemes and ploys against each other and all entanglements are truly insignificant compared to the will of the entire universe and the Vast Expanse...'

Su Ming sighed softly. It was only a guess, but he was sure that it was infinitesimally close to the truth.

'What is the point of practicing cultivation? Is it for eternal life? That is too narrow of a goal.'

Su Ming turned around to cast a glance at the galaxy in Harmonious Morus Alba's universe. He did not care about the hidden Old Man Extermination and his ancient ship. With his questions and epiphany, he walked towards the galaxy.

'How many people would know just what is eternal life? Even Arid Triad cannot live forever. Would the black-robed young man dare say he can live eternally?

'Everything in the world ends. Eternal life... is just something that comes along. The true goal of cultivation is to pursue the truth!' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and his footsteps became firmer.

'To search for the truth, to search for an answer to a question. This... is the goal of the cultivators of my generation and why we practice cultivation. Getting stronger and having longevity are just affiliations in the path of pursuing the truth.

'When we search for the truth, we also cultivate the truth!

'When we seek understanding, we also cultivate understanding. I, Su Ming, practiced cultivation because I wanted to understand what is happening around me. I wanted answers to my questions. It is just like what they say, Dao is the truth. Even though life is ephemeral... we can leave the world with a smile.'

As he gained his epiphany, Su Ming gradually gained an unfathomable presence. It was faint, and there was only a hint of it, but its appearance made it look like Su Ming was about to become transparent. It was as if at that moment, he surpassed Harmonious Morus Alba!

‘But even if I pursue the truth, even if I pursue understanding, it is only for an answer. But the phrase “to seek the answer” means that the path of cultivating Dao... is destined to be boundless.

‘You will never know where the end is... because the path of cultivation is only differentiated by how far different individuals can go. The end can never be seen.’

Su Ming smiled. He looked like he had just been freed from something. With his epiphany, he laughed, and his laughter gradually grew louder.

‘I live in Harmonious Morus Alba’s wings, but in whose body does Harmonious Morus Alba live? Even that life hosting Harmonious Morus Alba will only live for a short moment. When it lifts its head, would it not see that it is living in another life that will only live for a short moment? And when that life hosting these two is laughing, would it in the future understand that perhaps it is just a short brushstroke for a writer?

‘When that writer looks at the sky... I wonder, who will be the writer?

‘There is no end... just like how Dao is boundless.’

Su Ming stopped for a moment. When he lifted his head, a resolute light shone in his eyes. Slowly, he murmured, “I do not wish for much, only for those eyes to be mine!”

When Su Ming said that, his body became even more indistinct. The aura of one who surpassed Harmonious Morus Alba in terms of Realm became even stronger around him.

Su Ming lifted his head, and his aura spread out in an unseen manner. It enveloped his body, and Su Ming no longer had any semblance of sentience in his eyes, only empty eyes...

He was still moving forward, but he did not know where he was headed, or what his destination was, because his soul, his consciousness, and his will were completely immersed in his epiphany. It bloomed about him as the invisible aura roared.

He had no idea how long the epiphany would last. Perhaps for several days, perhaps for several years, or perhaps for several decades, centuries, or even more... Even Su Ming himself did not know how long it would last. He did not know what the epiphany would signify for him either.

He also did not know that since ancient times, over the countless aeons in Harmonious Morus Alba’s universe, there had never been anyone... who had obtained an epiphany that would lead them to Boundless Dao’s Realm!

Forget others, even Arid Triad had never had such an epiphany. In fact, even the once complete Harmonious Morus Alba had only longed for it. However... Su Ming had gained it at that moment!

It was the first time, and perhaps...the last for that universe!

The moment Su Ming gained his unprecedented epiphany, he lost his consciousness. With a dazed expression, he continued walking through the empty galaxy.

At that moment, Harmonious Morus Alba's will shuddered while hiding in its Expanse Cosmos—the place connected to the end of Yin Death Vortex's tunnel.

Its will turned into a butterfly and stared at the distant galaxy. Its body trembled. It sensed a presence that shocked it.

It was Boundless Dao's presence. Someone was trying to gain an epiphany of Boundless Dao!

To Harmonious Morus Alba, this was something unbelievable. As it shuddered, it showed signs of scattering, but it soon gathered together, but it was a telling sign of how shocked it was at that moment.

'Is it him? Is the person trying to gain the epiphany him?'

Complicated emotions appeared in Harmonious Morus Alba. The epiphany was something that it longed for, but it had never gained it. And right then, it had appeared in its universe.

In the capital planet of the Emperor of Abyss' True World within Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos was a tree that looked incredibly lush, but was in truth dead. The young man formed by Arid Triad stood underneath it silently and stared at the tree. No one knew what he was thinking about.

When Su Ming gained his epiphany, the young man's expression changed drastically. He turned around swiftly and lifted his head, staring at the galaxy. Disbelief gradually appeared on his face, and it was an expression that he wore incredibly rarely. He took a step forward, intending to investigate what was going on.

'Boundless Dao's presence... This is Boundless Dao's presence. Someone is trying to gain an epiphany of Boundless Dao. It's impossible. There is no life here who has gained great completion of Avacaniya Realm, and for anyone not in that Realm, it's impossible to gain an epiphany of Boundless Dao!

'This is... It's Su Ming!'

The young man's footsteps stopped. There was still disbelief on his face, but he no longer moved forward.

Within Heaven Lacking Expanse Cosmos, Old Man Extermination was sitting on an ancient ship hidden by the gap with a cold sneer on his lips while staring at Su Ming's palm print on the wooden plate before him. However, the cold sneer suddenly froze on his lips. He swiftly lifted his head, and his expression changed drastically.

'He's gaining an epiphany of Boundless Dao? This... This is...'

Old Man Extermination's pupils shrank. His disbelief even surpassed that of Arid Triad and Harmonious Morus Alba. In fact, he did not dare to think more and moved swiftly. While it looked like he was still sitting, a shadow overlapped itself on his body before it flew out swiftly. It instantly appeared in the Expanse Cosmos like an afterimage, then brought up its right hand to push against Su Ming who was moving forward in a daze.

But the moment his palm touched Su Ming, a hint of an aura that could shake the heavens spread out from Su Ming's body without a sound, and it... belonged to Boundless Dao!

At the instant that aura appeared, the afterimage let out a shrill scream of pain and disintegrated, but Su Ming did not seem to be aware of it. He continued moving forward in a daze.

He was indeed not aware of anything. At that moment, while in the state of gaining an epiphany, he forgot everything. His mind was blank.

When the shadow disintegrated, Old Man Extermination's body jolted while he was sitting on the ancient ship, and he coughed up a mouthful of blood.

It was... the second time he saw his blood since he stepped through the gap in Harmonious Morus Alba's wing. The first was due to his injuries when he just arrived.

Chapter 1345: Dao Divinity

Harmonious Morus Alba had never come into contact with Boundless Dao before, but it had reached a Realm where it could sense it.

That was why at the instant it sensed that presence, Boundless Dao were the only words that rose in its mind. The presence might be faint and it might just be an epiphany, but to the butterfly, it was something it could only dream of.

It was the same for Arid Triad. Compared to Harmonious Morus Alba, who once attained great completion in Avacaniya Realm, he had lost his chance for it when he failed to completely Possess Harmonious Morus Alba

He could only do it if he finished his Possession... and he had been trying to do it over countless aeons, but he had never managed to succeed. He could only encroach upon it bit by bit. Perhaps if he had enough time, he would succeed someday, but even so, he could only reach the strongest state that Harmonious Morus Alba had once had. He could only attain great completion in Avacaniya Realm.

However, once he Possessed most of Harmonious Morus Alba, Arid Triad also obtained quite a lot of memories and legacies. Among them was Harmonious Morus Alba's desire to reach Boundless Dao, and it naturally allowed Arid Triad to be able to see Boundless Dao as well... He also could understand that Su Ming was trying to gain a complete epiphany of the Realm.

As for Old Man Extermination, for a person who had a grand plan and who managed to survive the deaths of many Harmonious Morus Albas, it was impossible for him to not know about Boundless Dao. Just his multiple run-ins with Xuan Zang were enough for him to never be able to forget the presence of Boundless Dao. He also knew just how terrifying it was.

'No matter how much potential they have, no one in the entire universe can reach Boundless Dao Realm with just one epiphany!

'I have managed to barely come in contact with it after devouring the power of life before three Harmonious Morus Albas died... So what right do you have to succeed?!

'Su Ming... will not be able to reach that Realm!'

Old Man Extermination glared at the galaxy. With a sullen expression, he lifted his right hand and seized the air in the direction of Su Ming's palm print on the wooden plate. The palm print immediately became indistinct.

'Everything will still go according to plan. He will still be a sacrifice. It's impossible for him to escape from my hands.'

Those might have been Old Man Extermination's thoughts, but his gaze when he occasionally lifted his head to stare at the galaxy showed a rarely seen nervousness. It never appeared on his face unless he was facing Xuan Zang.

"There still isn't enough resentment. Apostles of Anger, Grief, and Resentment, I will give you full power to gather resentment from this universe!"

Old Man Extermination clenched his right fist, and when he unfurled his hand, three balls of souls appeared in it. His words traveled directly into the souls, and the three black-robed men in Saint Defier's camp instantly sensed it.

The three people in three different regions fell silent for a moment before they immediately sent out more clones. Each clone took on Su Ming's appearance, and when they spread out, they stirred up a bloody storm in all of Saint Defier's Expanse Cosmoes.

All the lives there suffered miserably. Each clone that took on Su Ming's appearance looked seemed to have its own will. As they killed mercilessly and brutally, they left behind Su Ming's name.

His name became a curse. Gradually, it was dipped in a sea of blood formed by great hatred of countless cultivators in Saint Defier's camp.

When the slaughter spread to Dark Dawn's camp, the wisps of resentment gathered together, causing the resentment in all of Dark Dawn and Saint Defier's Expanse Cosmoes to become incredibly thick.

This lasted for ten years while Su Ming continued walking in a daze in the fourth Expanse Cosmos. He went past many places during that time and the entire fourth wind. Many people saw Su Ming in the galaxy by pure coincidence during that period of time.

No life form could get close to him, however. At the instant anyone who harbored hostility attacked, they would receive varying degrees of backlash based on their different levels of cultivation, just like what Old Man Extermination had suffered.

Time passed, and soon, another ten years went by. A total of twenty years were gone. To mortals, that period of time would be equivalent to a child turning into a young adult. To cultivators, twenty years were only the blink of an eye, and it was especially so for the old monsters who lived through countless ages. To them, twenty years were equivalent to an instant.

Be it the boy, the purple-robed old man, or the young man in white, all three of them had long since completed their preparations for their legacies. In fact, quite a number of their Daoist friends had understood everything from their advice and persuasion. They gathered together and tried to leave behind their legacies.

They, too, saw Su Ming wandering about the galaxy during the twenty years. They could not get close to him, but they could vaguely sense a presence around him that shook them, and it felt like it was slowly rising in power... They watched, quietly waiting for the day Su Ming would wake up.

When the first cycle of sixty years was over, it could be said that all the old monsters who woke up in Heaven Lacking Expanse Cosmos had seen Su Ming, wandering about with a dazed expression and the increasingly more powerful presence. It caused the galaxy to distort wherever he went, and... the eternal rumbles in the Expanse Cosmos would stop when he arrived near them.

Right then, there was no way the cultivators in the Expanse Cosmos did not know that Su Ming had sunk into a state of an epiphany. No one was to interfere with him trying to gain it. If he continued on, he would either succeed and step into a Realm that would shock all under heaven... or fail to do so, but no matter what, this sort of epiphany was something that would only come on its own and not something they could gain by seeking it, no matter what Realm they were in.

Su Ming was completely unaware of the passing time, because at that moment, he no longer had any thoughts. He forgot everything. If no one came to bother him, he would continue in that state of gaining his epiphany until the day the entire universe was destroyed.

He did not know how many years had passed or just what deep grudge his name had gathered in Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. Those things were completely unknown to him at that moment.

He could only sense that he wanted to seek the truth and an answer while searching for an epiphany. There seemed to be an empty path before him, and he wanted to continue down that path. Even if there was no end to it, he would never turn his head back.

During the sixty years, Harmonious Morus Alba and Arid Triad both silently felt Su Ming's existence within their perception. They did not know whether he would succeed, but the severity of the matter would determine the universe's structure of power.

Old Man Extermination watched Su Ming as well. He had spent nearly nine-tenths of the sixty years on Su Ming... and then, another cycle of sixty years went by.

When 120 years passed, Su Ming still did not show any signs of waking up, but the presence of Boundless Dao Realm around him became stronger. At that moment, the anxiety in Old Man Extermination's heart grew to a state where it had to explode. He could not allow Su Ming to continue gaining his epiphany. Even though he was very certain that Su Ming would not succeed... he could not sit by and watch it.

He was afraid... of something unforeseen happening!

He could not allow even the slightest accident happen when there was only three hundred something years left until Harmonious Morus Alba was destroyed. His expression contorted, and resolve slowly appeared in his eyes. He swiftly raised his right hand, and his gaze fell on the three balls of souls.

“Step into Arid Triad and behead all the people in Ninth Summit. Then send their heads here... Use their blood to force him to wake up!”

Old Man Extermination’s voice had a dark undertone. It was the only method he could think of to break Su Ming’s epiphany.

The moment his words reached the three balls of souls, the three black-robed men, who had stirred up a bloody storm in Dark Dawn and Saint Defier’s camps and formed an endless amount of resentment towards Su Ming, fell silent. They chose obedience. They retrieved their clones, and the three of them turned into three long black arcs that charged towards the gap leading to Arid Triad.

A sigh came from the space beside Old Man Extermination at that moment.

“Must you do this?”

The sigh came incredibly abruptly, causing Old Man Extermination’s expression to change, and he lifted his head. A figure walked out of the space before him, and it... belonged to Su Ming.

But Old Man Extermination could sense clearly that Su Ming was still wandering about in a daze while trying to gain his epiphany.

“Dao Divinity!”

Old Man Extermination’s pupils shrank. At the instant he opened his mouth, Su Ming’s figure, who had walked out of the space before him, lifted his right hand and pushed forward slowly.

He looked real, but in truth, he was just an illusion. When he brought up his hand and pushed forward, Old Man Extermination’s eyes shone. He moved, and an indistinct figure appeared in front of him as well. It seemed to have appeared in the exact same manner as Su Ming’s!

The two figures clashed against each other.

From one strike, the fourth Expanse Cosmos cracked. The crack penetrated through space and looked like a dividing line that didn’t allow light and darkness to fuse together.

At the instant the crack appeared, the ancient ship Old Man Extermination had hidden revealed itself after a series of distortions. Old Man Extermination’s hair flew up, and the illusory body before him turned into crystalline glows that scattered away.

Su Ming's illusory body disintegrated on the other side of the crack as well. When it did so, Old Man Extermination shook his head, and there was a hint of regret as well as determination on his face.

"In just 120 years, you managed to form a Dao Divinity. Su Ming... I underestimated you, but it does not matter. You cannot hurt me, and neither can I hurt you. Then... three hundred years later, we will end things between us.

"That moment is no longer far away!"

Old Man Extermination's lips curled into a smile. His body and the ancient ship gradually disappeared into space. Only a crack that divided the Expanse Cosmos remained to bear witness of what had just happened.

In the galaxy in the distance, Su Ming's footsteps suddenly came to a halt. His presence slowly gathered together, and his expression was no longer dazed. Slowly, he opened his eyes.

He was silent for a long while before he said faintly, "When we meet again three hundred years later... will you still be you?"

Chapter 1346: Sacred Wood

Su Ming's expression was much more indifferent than before. His gaze was even more profound, and he seemed to have no temper, like a pool of clear water.

He was calm and indifferent. It seemed like even if the world was destroyed before him, his expression would not change... unless someone stepped on his tail.

'Boundless Dao... I didn't expect that with this epiphany, I would be able to come into contact with Boundless Dao Realm for the first time. It's a pity that I don't have enough time... If I could remain immersed in the epiphany for ten thousand years or even longer, then perhaps I would be able to step into Boundless Dao in one go.'

Su Ming might feel slight pity that he could not do so, but he understood that he did not have enough time. The destruction was around the corner. If he continued with the epiphany, then when he woke up and everything was no longer around, the sadness and grief he was supposed to feel might be buried in the passage of time, and he would never be able to find them.

After all, the Art of Time was not an Art did not allow him to work wonders...

'I might not be able to truly step into Boundless Dao Realm, but I now have a wisp of Boundless Dao Realm's presence, and I managed to manifest... the Dao Divinity Old Man Extermination spoke of...'

Su Ming's third eye shone at the center of his brow. He could vaguely see an illusory figure sitting cross-legged within it.

That figure exuded an incredibly terrifying presence, and it was so strong that even the complete Harmonious Morus Alba would instinctively avoid it. After all, it was... the Dao Divinity Su Ming had obtained when he took the first step in understanding the Boundless Dao Realm.

It was the divinity of Boundless Dao!

It was like a seed and also like a qualification. Only those who had manifested a Dao Divinity could step into Boundless Dao Realm. This was also why Old Man Extermination had been so confident previously that Su Ming would not be able to be successful in gaining an epiphany.

Before trying to gain his epiphany, Su Ming had not gained the right to manifest his Dao Divinity, but right then, it was different. With a Dao Divinity, he had ascended to a higher state of being. At that moment, there was practically no difference between him and Arid Triad. In fact, in certain aspects, Su Ming was even stronger.

Even though he had not reached the peak of the later stage of Avacaniya Realm, he could already sense his limits, and he had gained a direction.

"Cultivation base as well as power are just complements in the path to search for answers. I don't have to pay too much attention to them."

As Su Ming mumbled to himself, he flung his arm and looked at the space around him. The process of trying to gain his epiphany for over one hundred years had lasted for about the blink of an eye to Su Ming. His memories were of the moment all that time ago. However, he had a feeling as if they had been covered in dust. It was due to an insignificant discomfort naturally formed due to the change of time.

While walking through the galaxy, Su Ming gradually stopped bothering about the insignificant discomfort. When he looked around himself, he felt as if he could vaguely see the planet formed by the boy's original form.

He could also see the huge Sacred Wood floating in the galaxy!

Before he left the Expanse Cosmos formed by the fourth wing, Su Ming had to go to the Sacred Wood and meet the boy and the others again so that he could deliver their legacies into the world that may or may not exist.

Once he finished doing that, he would leave the fourth Expanse Cosmos as well as Dark Dawn and Saint Defier's camps. He would return to Arid Triad, since the three black-robed men, be it Tian Xie Zi or Lie Shan Xiu, had already headed there.

Su Ming's Morning Dao's will was observing all of it. In fact, once Su Ming obtained his Dao Divinity, he had a feeling that if he wanted, he just needed to close his eyes, and when he opened them again, True Morning Dao World's will would manifest another version of him.

He was omnipresent. This was what Su Ming understood once he gained his Dao Divinity.

With an indifferent expression, he walked through the galaxy until a huge Sacred Wood appeared before him. It was hundreds of feet long. At that moment, it had a great presence that could shock people.

Su Ming stopped moving. When he looked into the distance, he spread his will and had it descend on the Sacred Wood. The strange power from the Sacred Wood which had once blocked Su Ming's will from investigating it appeared again, making it difficult for him to proceed. He could not send his will into all of the Sacred Wood.

Su Ming's expression remained as calm as ever. He instantly opened his third eye, where his Dao Divinity sat and meditated. At that moment, he opened his eyes as well, and at the instant he did so, the Dao Divinity's third eye at the center of its brow opened as well... and within it was another figure who was also sitting and meditating. That figure too opened its eyes.

There was no end to it... Su Ming did not know just how many figures there were. It was the mysterious aspect of Dao Divinities.

The moment they opened their third eyes, Su Ming's will gained a hint of Boundless Dao Realm's presence. It was like a general leading an army of soldiers. Once it appeared, it immediately surged into the Sacred Wood, and all forms of power blocking its path were instantly dissolved upon touch. This allowed Su Ming to see into the Sacred Wood's world.

There were countless cave abodes in the Sacred Wood. Most of them were occupied by sleeping cultivators, but when Su Ming's will entered, the hearts of all the cultivators who were sleeping or had long since woken up trembled, and they instantly opened their eyes. Shock appeared on their faces.

The old monsters who had lived there for an unknown number of aeons instantly felt their hearts thump in fear. At the same time, they heard a calm voice in their ears.

The voice was not loud. It only echoed faintly in space. It did not sound at all majestic, and neither did it sound overbearing, but the meaning behind its words was filled with a

domineering air that was not at all hidden. It was laid bare to the world, showing off an air of superiority!

"I'll be taking this wood. You have ten breaths to leave."

Su Ming spoke calmly, and once he finished, he did not add anything more. Instead, he waited calmly for the ten breaths to pass.

The Sacred Wood was silent.

When the fifth breath arrived, some of the powerful warriors flew out. Upon rushing out, they saw Su Ming in the distance, and their hearts trembled. They immediately recognized him as the person who had been walking in the galaxy in a daze for over one hundred years.

After all, while most of the powerful warriors in the Sacred Wood were asleep, there were some who were awake. They did not stay for long periods of time in the Sacred Wood either. They would occasionally venture out, and they had either personally seen or heard from the others about Su Ming. They were not unfamiliar with him.

During the eighth breath... only two-tenths of the cultivators in the Sacred Wood chose to leave the place, but they did not go far. Instead, they stared at Su Ming coldly. They wanted to see just how conceited this person was that he would think he could stand against nearly ten thousand powerful warriors in the Sacred Wood with just his own strength.

After all, they were all powerful warriors from their own aeons, and they had the right to not be destroyed by the disaster. Each of them had the power that could cause the galaxy to tremble when they stomped down.

At the instant ten breaths went by, Su Ming lifted his head. His expression was as indifferent as ever. He only lifted his right hand to point at the huge Sacred Wood.

"With my will and my Dao Divinity, become smaller..."

Once he declared that he wanted the Sacred Wood to become smaller, the huge log let out a loud bang that shook the entire Expanse Cosmos. The log trembled viciously, and the cultivators in the area who were watching with cold sneers on their faces were dumbfounded. They personally saw the Sacred Wood shrink to nearly a size smaller.

At that moment, a huge storm rose up in their hearts. They were all shocked, and disbelief showed up on their faces. In their minds, the Sacred Wood was indestructible, could not transform, and in fact, was something that could not be slighted.

There were some people who tried to turn the Sacred Wood into their treasure before, but none of them had succeeded. No matter how strong they were, they could not do

so. In fact, those who tried to refine the log would suffer great backlash and would die miserable deaths.

However, right before their eyes, the Sacred Wood shrank when Su Ming pointed at it. The shock delivered to all the people watching was no different from one million lightning bolts roaring in their minds.

If that was the case for those outside, then it was even more so for the countless powerful warriors who had chosen to ignore Su Ming and remain in the Sacred Wood. Their expressions changed drastically. They could clearly sense the Sacred Wood becoming smaller, but the size of their own bodies did not change. All of their cave abodes became much smaller.

In fact, those cave abodes—which were not big to begin with—even became too narrow for anyone to sit within them!

At that moment, almost all the cultivators who had remained in the Sacred Wood chose to get out of the log as their expressions changed. Their bodies instantly appeared outside the Sacred Wood. Some of them might have lived for a very long time, but were still very hot-tempered people, and when they rushed out, they immediately started shouting loudly.

But their shouts only lasted for an instant. They went silent when Su Ming made his second declaration that he wanted the Sacred Wood to become smaller. Their shouts turned into the thumping of their hearts.

“Become smaller...”

The still huge Sacred Wood shuddered again and shrank by one size once more. At that moment, it no longer looked like it was one million feet long. Instead, it was only hundreds of thousands of feet long!

The change in its size did not cause any cultivators to die. After all, Su Ming gave them enough time to leave. Because of it, all the cultivators from the Sacred Wood were levitating in the galaxy around the area. They watched the Sacred Wood, now only hundreds of thousands of feet long after shrinking twice, and the apprehension they felt turned into terror in their hearts.

They could imagine... how their bodies would have been squashed by their cave abodes if they had insisted on staying inside.

When Su Ming declared that he wanted the Sacred Wood to become smaller the third time, the Sacred Wood shuddered again, and as all the people's pupils shrank, it became smaller again. This time, it did not become a size smaller, but was reduced to... only thousands of feet long!

Su Ming seized the space in the direction of the Sacred Wood with his right hand, and it immediately charged towards him. While doing so, it shrank again. When it landed in Su Ming's palm, it had already shrunk to the size of a palm!

Chapter 1347: Ceaseless Greed

The hundreds of thousands of cultivators who saw the event were rendered speechless, and a chill ran down their backs. The hot-tempered ones from before also felt their hearts tremble, and they did not dare to say a single word.

To them, power was everything, and Su Ming showed his by controlling the Sacred Wood that no one had been able to refine for countless years.

The hundreds of thousands of cultivators in the area knew just how powerful Su Ming was for having been able to do such a thing. His strength had already surpassed theirs by far.

No one could say who was the first to wrap their fist in their palm to bow to Su Ming, but soon, the others followed suit and wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed to Su Ming. Respect coming from the bottom of their hearts appeared on their faces.

This was power, and to them, everything in the world was decided by power.

Before he gained his epiphany, Su Ming had the same belief, but right then, he understood that power was just a complement in the path of seeking the truth, an auxiliary that made the path smoother. It was just something additional that would never become the foundation of the path. Once anyone reversed the positions of the addition and the foundation, they would forever walk on the wrong path while searching for the truth.

Su Ming lowered his head and cast a glance at the Sacred Wood on his palm. The log was not completely unrefinable, as believed by the others due to what they had tried over countless years. It was because... the item belonged to Old Man Extermination.

Unless they had the same power as him, it was impossible to obtain it. As for why Old Man Extermination had placed it in the middle of the galaxy instead of taking it away, Su Ming did not want to form too many assumptions about it. He only felt that this item was pretty good and could be used as a stepping stone if he wanted to walk into the Vast Expanse some day in the future.

That was why he took it with him.

In fact, when he looked at the Sacred Wood, Su Ming guessed that perhaps... the gap on the butterfly's fourth wing had come from the huge log of wood crashing into it from the universe beyond.

Su Ming clenched his fist and put away the Sacred Wood, then cast a glance at the cultivators wrapping their fists in their palms and bowing to him. He sighed softly. Those people were happy because they did not know that the disaster three hundred something years later would bring them unavoidable destruction.

Sometimes, ignorance was bliss.

Su Ming shook his head, then turned around to leave. He wanted to settle one last matter in Heaven Lacking Expanse Cosmos before he left.

While walking, his footsteps were not quick, but when his feet landed in the galaxy, it seemed to become smaller. With two steps, he saw the planet manifested by the boy.

He saw the boy, the purple-robed old man, the young man in white, and four other strangers he had never seen on the planet.

The seven people had manifested their legacy items and waited on the planet that symbolized beauty, never leaving it. It seemed like they wanted to live through the last few hundred years in that place to look at the final brilliance of their universe.

They were also waiting for Su Ming—their only hope as of then.

Beyond the prosperous cities on the planet, there was a sycamore tree with red leaves. Su Ming stood there with the setting sun behind him. The sun was red, and it served as a background for the leaves. They did not compete with each other in terms of beauty. The only thing that could be felt when they appeared together... was a hint of melancholy that had drifted over from some unknown area.

When the autumn wind blew, when the leaves fell, when a person turned their head around... perhaps they would no longer see that figure standing under the sycamore tree nor the setting sun behind it.

Su Ming watched the setting sun illuminating the cities with its final rays of light and the scattered lamps lit in the houses, feeling as if he was watching the whole universe's rise and fall. He continued watching until the boy walked over from the distance beside him. Then, the purple-robed old man and the young man in white also showed up. They did not bother Su Ming, but instead stood by the side quietly with respectful gazes.

Their four other friends also stood nearby. They waited respectfully while watching him.

Su Ming was their hope. Even if they were going to die the next day, it was fine as long as their Daos and their epiphanies could be passed down.

As long as... their bloodline would not disappear!

This was a mindset low-ranked cultivators would not understand, but they were not the only ones. Some high-ranked cultivators could not understand it either.

But the few who did would leave behind countless legends and hopes in the world of cultivation so that there would constantly be people who could practice cultivation in the universe. They... had decided to offer their whole life's worth of hard work to the path of cultivation!

The sun gradually set as if symbolizing Harmonious Morus Alba's world. After coming down, it might no longer appear the next morning. It was just like the red sycamore leaves. Once they fell, they would never be able to return to the sycamore tree and dye it red. They could only direct their resentment at the wind for having arrived too soon, at the season for changing too soon, and... themselves for falling.

Su Ming sighed softly and looked at the houses in the cities gradually lighting up. He watched the sky slowly turn dark. He might like night, but during that moment, he would rather have had everything remain the same for all eternity.

"You're here," he said softly.

The seven beside Su Ming raised their heads and looked at him before they wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed to him.

No one spoke. At that moment, no one wanted to speak. Everything they wanted to convey was in their bows. They could not say it, and they did not need to say it.

Su Ming shifted his gaze away from the cities in the distance and looked at the boy. The boy was also staring at Su Ming. Their gazes met, and Su Ming saw the sadness as well as the hint of hope on the boy's face.

"Your Dao is very unique. It also touched me very deeply. It's just like your Daoist monastic name. Ban Bu Zi... perhaps while you walk through your Dao and open your eyes, everything in existence will serve to be a complement to you, and when you close your eyes, you will serve as a complement to everything in existence.

"Ban Bu Zi, it means half a step, but Bu also sounds similar to complement, making it seem as if you and everything in existence are two halves complementing each other..."

The boy shuddered, and a bright light lit up in his eyes. He stood stunned for some time, before he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply to Su Ming.

"Your disciple has learned his lesson."

It was the first time since he had become the strongest of his aeon and learned that he could survive the disaster of his aeon that he... referred to himself as a disciple and performed the actions of one.

He referred to himself as a disciple, but that did not mean that he was a student under Su Ming's tutelage, neither was it a title referring to differences in seniority. Instead, it was a form of gratitude to a person who bestowed knowledge upon him, and there was no point in caring about seniority, because there was no difference in seniority when it came to the path of cultivation. There was no doubt Su Ming had moved further than all of them in the pursuit of truth, and when he turned his head around, he gave them an epiphany, and hence, he obtained their respect.

"Your Dao is disheveled and jumbled up. You have only fused everything together and understood it after you gathered all of your power to perceive it. It is like how all things will return to their roots. To fulfill the ambitions of those who seek to perform great feats, your Dao became the ocean, but it will never be able to drown your thoughts," Su Ming said slowly while looking at the purple-robed old man.

The purple-robed old man was silent. After a long while, he smiled. He did not speak, but neither did he bow.

"As for you... you are the peak of all sword cultivators. When you draw your sword, your will to kill is firm and not gentle. These are my words for you... There is nothing in the sky that cannot be cut and nothing on the ground that cannot shatter. They will not be cut and not shatter only because the sword has not been drawn!"

Once the young man in white heard his words, he took a few steps back, lifted his head to look at Su Ming, then wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to him.

"Your disciple has learned his lesson."

"I have never met the four of you before, but since you have made your decision, I will not destroy your hopes, but I do not know whether that world exists."

Su Ming cast his gaze on the other four people. All of them had unique features.

One of them was incredibly big and built. When he stood there, the air around him distorted slightly. Su Ming could tell at first glance that he had suppressed his body. If he released his full power, his body would definitely become even larger.

In fact, there were indistinct stars at the center of that person's brow. Clearly, he had a bloodline that was similar to that of the Ancient Gods. In truth, there were similarities that could be found in all the races between each aeon, and that person belonged to the bloodline of the Ancient Gods in a certain aeon within Harmonious Morus Alba.

The person next to him was a woman. She had a dignified look, and Su Ming could see a vague shadow behind her. It was an existence that was green from head to toe, had a single horn, and resembled a monster.

The third person did not bother to hide his true form. Black fog spread from his whole body. It was thick and had great corrosive properties.

His face could not be seen. Only a pair of red eyes could be detected from within the fog, but nonetheless, Su Ming could see the person's true form. It was a huge creature with two horns on its head.

The last person was a middle-aged man dressed in green robes. He looked like a sage and was filled with an ethereal air. Su Ming was not unfamiliar with his presence. It belonged to those in the world of Immortals, which he had seen before.

Su Ming only cast a glance at those people and did not speak. Instead, the moment the sky turned dark, he lifted his right hand. When he was about to swing his arm, a glint suddenly shone in his eyes.

"They arrived so soon?"

As Su Ming mumbled under his breath, he closed his eyes. When he opened them again, his gaze returned to normal. He swung his right hand, and the entire sky roared, turning into a huge vortex. That vortex spun swiftly, and Su Ming opened his third eye. Within it, his Dao Divinity opened its eyes as well.

Su Ming used his Dao Divinity to guide his will so that he could open a crack leading to the world that may or may not exist!

"Send your legacies in there."

When Su Ming spoke faintly, the boy opened his mouth resolutely, and a black statue flew out from his mouth into the vortex in the sky.

The eyes of the young man in white sparkled. What he delivered was the sword he always carried behind his back. Once it was sent out, even the vortex in the sky shuddered, as if it was about to stop rotating. It was a testament to how great the will in his sword was.

The purple-robed old man swung his arm, and as the center of his brow squirmed, a crack opened up. A crystal the size of a fist flew out from it. The crystal shone with black light and charged into the sky.

As for the other four, they sent out their legacy items as well. A total of seven items were sucked into the vortex, but the next moment, the crystal sent by the purple-robed old man looked as if it could not withstand the force of the vortex, and cracks appeared

on it. As cracking sounds shot into the air, the number of cracks increased, but the purple-robed old man did not show any changes on his expression. However, if anyone took a closer look, they would find... that he was only an empty shell!

At the instant the other people's expressions changed, the black crystal that was about to disappear into the vortex shattered, and a small humanoid flew out from within. The humanoid figure resembled the purple-robed man. He let out a shrill scream, voicing his unwillingness to admit defeat, and tried to rush back into the vortex, but in the end... as the vortex rotated, he was crushed to powder.

The purple-robed old man's body was reduced to ash during that moment as well, and he disappeared from the world.

Chapter 1348: Su Ming, I Want to Cry...

The tunnel formed by the vortex in the sky was a path Su Ming had opened so that the boy and others could send out their legacy items. Besides them, they could not send in anything else, like their Nascent Divinities.

Since greed could never be satiated, cultivators like the purple-robed old man, who took the risk, were always present. Since they were all bound to die hundreds of years later, then he might as well step into the world that may or may not exist.

But he was worried that Su Ming would not allow this, which was why he had decided to risk trying to deceive him. In truth, Su Ming had long since noticed it, which was why he had said his words earlier, but he had not done anything to bring about the death of the purple-robed old man's Nascent Divinity. The man had been destroyed simply because he could not withstand the mighty pressure in the tunnel.

When the vortex vanished and the sky returned to normal, the boy turned his head around with a complicated expression and cast a glance at the spot where the purple-robed old man had stood. At that moment, there was no one there. The purple-robed old man had long since disappeared into the wind as ashes.

The sycamore tree glowed in a shade of red despite being in the dark, but no one took any interest in it.

The boy was silent. The young man in white also had a slightly complicated expression on his face. The other four people beside them did not speak either. A hint of sadness rose in their hearts. They knew that the purple-robed old man's death was not related to Su Ming. He had just gone seeking his own end.

However, they could understand what the purple-robed old man had felt when he made his decision. In truth, all of them had thought about it at least once...

"If that world truly exists, then your legacies... will continue in that world, and they will have my blessing."

Su Ming swung his arm and cast a final glance at the cultivators before him. Then, he turned around and stepped into the air.

The boy and the others bowed deeply to him as one. There was no need for them to voice their gratitude, and neither did Su Ming need it. He had just done it because he respected their conviction to pass down their legacies.

When Su Ming left, the boy continued to stand beside the sycamore tree under the night sky. A smile slowly appeared on his face. There was no calculativeness to it. He stared at the sky with a peaceful look. His legacy held his blessings and hopes, wishing that his children might be able to grow to surpass him in that world which may or may not exist.

The young man in white touched his now swordless scabbard with an expression on his face as if he was free. He had turned his own sword into his legacy. Even if it shattered in that world which may or may not exist, it would still turn into numerous sharp swords. Anyone who became their masters would accomplish many great feats.

He did not need a scion. What he needed was just to deliver his will of a sword cultivator into that world, into the hands of those who could obtain his sword!

The other four stared at the sky quietly. There were different hopes in their hearts, but they were all similar in a way too... They would never know how their legacies would shine in that world which may or may not exist.

The answer was not important, however. What was important was that they no longer had any regrets.

"My fellow Daoists, I wish to sleep during the final three hundred something years. I do not want to think about anything else, and will wait for that day to arrive," the boy said while looking at the people beside him.

"I'm going to wander about. I'm going to create another sword for myself during these three hundred something years."

The young man in white smiled faintly. It was slightly cold, but it still contained the air of him being free of his burdens. As he spoke, he wrapped his fist in his palm to the others and took a step into the air.

The other four were silent for a moment before they wrapped their fists in their palms towards the boy. They turned into four long arcs that shot into the air and disappeared into the starry sky as well.

When the group left, the boy sat down cross-legged under the sycamore tree and leaned against it. He watched the lights of the houses in the city, and a faint smile appeared at the corners of his lips. He slowly closed his eyes and fell into a deep sleep.

The autumn breeze blew past and lifted his hair. The autumn leaves fell and turned into a blanket that covered his body. Once he closed his eyes, the entire world gradually turned indistinct. In the end, it turned into nothingness.

When an unknown amount of time passed and he opened his eyes again, he was no longer under the sycamore tree, but was at the mountainside. The sky was no longer dark. The sun hung high above, showing that it was noon. The mountainside was covered in green grass. Cows and sheep formed herds. He... was still a shepherd boy, but he had already forgotten his true identity at that moment.

"I had a dream..." The boy patted his head with an enraptured expression on his face.

Once Su Ming took a step into the galaxy, the space around him was lifted without a sound, as if a page in a book had been turned. When it fell again, the fourth wing had already been changed and turned into the Heavenly Foxes' Expanse Cosmos, located in Dark Dawn's camp.

Su Ming looked at the somewhat familiar galaxy and found that he could not find the bald crane. He could not help but laugh at that. A long time had passed, and with how the bald crane was, it had to have left to fool around somewhere.

When Su Ming turned around, he spread his will and noticed that the woman called Zi Ruo was beside Yan Pei. Su Ming was silent for a moment before he chose to take a step towards them.

Zi Ruo stood on a mountain in a planet at the center of the Heavenly Foxes' Expanse Cosmos. One hundred something years might only be an instant for her, but right then... there was a miserable look on her face.

Beside her was Yan Pei. His face was filled with anguish, and he looked as if he wanted to open his mouth to say something, but when he looked at Zi Ruo's side profile, he found that he could not say anything.

After a long while, Yan Pei sighed in his heart and said slowly, "You should know that the person who appeared in Dark Dawn and Saint Defier earlier was not him..."

“Of course I know it’s not him... but I personally saw my people die in his hands. It was his face, his presence, and I saw my people’s madness and resentment... What am I supposed to do?!” Zi Ruo shuddered, and hatred appeared in her eyes.

Yan Pei was silent. He did not know what he should say. Even though he knew that person was not Su Ming and even though he was a Sovereign of Dawn, it was impossible for him to make the cultivators filled with intense resentment believe in his words.

If he had not been familiar with Su Ming, then even he would have been in disbelief when he saw what happened...

At that moment, neither he nor the miserable Zi Ruo noticed Su Ming standing behind them. When he heard their conversation, he frowned.

As he did so, he spread his will quietly through the area, making it fill the Heavenly Foxes’ Expanse Cosmos, and by extension, all the Expanse Cosmoses in Dark Dawn. He also spread it into Saint Defier’s camp so that he could see all the 180 Expanse Cosmoses there.

The things happening in the two Expanse Cosmoses appeared like pictures in Su Ming’s mind. He saw that nearly half of the Heavenly Foxes had died, and it was practically the same for all the races in Dark Dawn’s camp as well as the 180 Expanse Cosmoses in Saint Defier’s camp.

There were many people who hated him. During the one hundred something years, they watched the brutality of the person named Su Ming as he slaughtered their people, and the depth of their resentment as well as the intensity of their killing intent towards him caused Su Ming to fall silent once he saw everything.

It was clearly Old Man Extermination’s doing, but Su Ming could not think of why he would do so. It did not matter how many people died in the one hundred something years since the moment the disaster descended, they would all be wiped off. Besides gathering resentment, there was no other gain in performing such an act.

‘Resentment...’

Su Ming frowned. After a long while, the crease between his eyebrows disappeared. Since he could not understand what was going on, it would be better if he chose not to think about it. The event had already happened, so even if he tried to resolve it, it would be useless, just like crying over spilled milk.

Su Ming’s expression was calm, and his heart was at ease. He only needed to know that it was not of his doing. As for the rest... Su Ming did not want to care.

In fact, he could already imagine that since it was related to Old Man Extermination, there was a high possibility that it was connected to the three black-robed men Old Man Extermination had sent to Arid Triad.

When he thought of them, Su Ming sighed softly, then turned around and left. He did not show up and interrupt Yan Pei and Zi Ruo.

He turned around and stepped into space. When his foot landed, he had already left Dark Dawn's camp and stepped into the galaxy belonging to Saint Defier's camp.

He went to the place where the bald crane was located.

Saint Defier's camp had an Expanse Cosmos known as Small Falling Dust Cosmos. It was a small Expanse Cosmos located at the borders, near the Expanse Cosmos belonging to the Sky Buriers. Falling Dust had a sacred position in Saint Defier's camp... because one of the three Lords of Saint Defier stayed there—Fei Hua.

There was only one cultivation planet in Falling Dust Cosmos. It was covered in lush greenery, which was surrounded by rivers and seas, making the planet look like a land of water. It was filled with a graceful and gentle air, but it also had a mighty presence, giving off a feeling that was no weaker than that of tall and gigantic mountains.

There was a lake on the planet, and a wooden house beside it. Countless plants and flowers grew around it, and a nice fragrance filled the air, making the place overflow with vitality. There was an old woman sitting outside the wooden house. She watched the lake by herself with a gentle smile on her face as if she was going through her memories and was immersed in the past.

Not too far away from her was the bald crane. It had turned into a stone and lay on the ground in a daze. Over the one hundred something years, it had stared at the wooden house and the old woman just like that. It felt like it could continue staring at her until the world was destroyed and the universe was no longer around.

It did not know why it stared at her, and it also did not know why it came there. Every single time the bald crane thought of that question, its heart would throb in pain, and it would feel as if it was about to be ripped apart.

Once it stopped trying to figure it out, the bald crane found another form of peace in the one hundred something years, one that was different from when it stayed beside Su Ming. It was no longer obsessed with crystals, no longer thought about the past it could not remember, and in fact, it decided to stay beside the old woman and accompany her for the rest of its life.

Then one day, when Su Ming appeared quietly beside it and sat down silently, the stone that was the bald crane slowly transformed. Once it gained its original form, it looked over at him.

Su Ming was also looking at the bald crane. He saw the tears in the bald crane's eyes. For an illusory body with no physical form... tears were a luxury. It was impossible for them to fall, so those tears were the manifestation of sadness.

"Su Ming... I want to cry..." the bald crane murmured.

Chapter 1349: If Only Loulan [1] Was Still Around

It was the first time the bald crane had said such a thing, and when Su Ming heard its words, he felt slightly miserable. He stared at the bald crane. To him, the bald crane was not a pet, but a friend. In fact, it was of equal status to Lei Chen, his eldest senior brother, second senior brother, and Hu Zi in Su Ming's heart.

Their friendship was like old wine. As time passed, it became more fragrant, and once he drank it, he would be drunk, and he could laugh happily his entire life.

"She is..." Su Ming said softly.

"She should be Fei Hua... I think so," the bald crane murmured.

It had watched the woman for one hundred something years. It did not know whether she had noticed it. The bald crane only knew that it wanted to watch her very much. There seemed to be a period of time when it had watched a woman like that before as well, and at that time, it seemed to have also noticed that there was a pair of eyes watching it.

And at that time, the bald crane did not think that it was a bald crane. To it, who was a being that could transform, the bald crane's form was the one it adapted the most, but it... had already forgotten whether this was really its original form.

It was a form of sadness, and even more so, a form of pain. It had already forgotten its earliest appearance and forgotten how it became the bald crane... It only vaguely remembered that it did not look like that in the past, but had been a cultivator.

Su Ming was silent for a while before saying softly, "I still have your physical body with me. If you want to... you can fuse with it. This will bring more of your memories back."

The bald crane fell silent... It had chosen not to fuse with its physical body in the past because it had a feeling that if it did so, it would have its memories restored... Once that happened however, another set of its memories would disappear.

The choice made it feel lost. Yet a voice that had been suppressed for years at a corner of its mind cried out shrilly at that moment. That voice became louder as time passed as if it wanted to affect the bald crane's mind.

"Fuse with your physical body and restore your memories. You are Kong Mo, a powerful warrior who has absolutely no respect for laws in this universe belonging to Harmonious Morus Alba. You are Kong Mo!

"Awakening Kong Mo would mean allowing yourself to wake up. It's Old Man Extermination who caused your physical body to be torn apart. It's Old Man Extermination who made you lose yourself after you fought with him. Wake up... find Old Man Extermination, and fight him again!"

"Get lost! Get out of my head!"

Blood capillaries appeared in the bald crane's eyes, and it swiftly began growling, suppressing the voice that was becoming louder in its heart. When it lifted its head, it looked at Su Ming.

"I don't want to turn into Kong Mo..."

As it spoke, the bald crane trembled slightly. It turned its head back and looked at the old woman sitting under the wooden house beside the lake. At that moment, she raised her head as well, and their gazes seemed to meet.

Tears fell from the bald crane's eyes, but they could not reach the ground. They could only disappear into the air...

"Let's go. We're leaving. Damn it, I still need to find more crystals!"

The bald crane swiftly turned around and changed into a long arc to leave. Su Ming watched it quietly. He could sense its sorrow and all the complicated emotions in it. When he turned his head around, he looked at the old woman, and he also saw tears in her eyes.

With a soft sigh, Su Ming brought his right hand and pointed at the old woman in the distance. With it, a vortex appeared at the center of the old woman's brow. Once it appeared, the ferocious figure of the Five-Faced Beast Deity rushed out from within. It turned into a long arc that charged at Su Ming. When it landed on his palm, Su Ming shook his head, turned around, and left.

"I've broken your Curse and restored your cultivation base..."

When Su Ming went away, he left a few words behind. They echoed in the ears of the old woman, whose face was slowly changing to that of a teenage girl.

The girl looked at the other side of the lake in a daze. It was the spot where the bald crane had lain during the one hundred something years.

Fei Hua did not care about the Curse's dissipation, and neither did she care about her face changing. But... there was no way she would not know that the person she had been waiting for had been quietly watching her for over one hundred years.

Even if his appearance had changed, it was impossible for her to forget that feeling, and it was also impossible for her to forget how many years she had waited for him. She did not long for him to appear before her. His companionship over the one hundred years from across the lake already made her feel content...

They were the warmest one hundred years in her life since she had reached Avacaniya Realm.

The girl sighed softly and lowered her head. When she brought her right hand up, she spread out an ancient picture before her. The canvas were already yellow, bearing the signs of time, but it could not hide the mischievous expression on the smug boy grinning brightly as he stood beside two girls.

"If only Loulan was still around..." the girl mumbled softly. She watched the boy in the picture for a time, then slowly closed her eyes.

.....

Su Ming left.

With the bald crane, he returned to Arid Triad's gap, and from there, they went back to Arid Triad's Expanse Cosmos.

A familiar galaxy, a familiar presence, and a familiar Morning Dao...

Su Ming was familiar with everything in that place. It was his home. Ninth Summit was as magnificent as ever. Its development over the one hundred something years turned it into an existence that reached the skies.

The intruders from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier had returned to their own Expanse Cosmoses when Su Mings formed by the three black-robed men had gone to slaughter their people. After that... they did not return.

The four war-torn True Worlds in Arid Triad had obtained a period of rare peace. The remaining cultivators started restoring their True Worlds, but it did not look like the four Great True Worlds could ever return to their former glory.

However, only a few people knew that the disaster was about to arrive; only a few people were aware that several hundred years later... they would no longer exist.

Su Ming stood beyond the disappeared Heavenly Incense Rune and stared quietly in the north. After a long while... he turned around, and with the still dispirited bald crane in tow, he appeared in a seemingly calm spot in the galaxy, located beside Ninth Summit.

It was a calm and quiet place. It seemed like a lake that would not billow. There were no ripples on its surface, but Su Ming still stood there for a long, long time.

"I'm going to meet two old acquaintances." Su Ming looked at the bald crane.

It nodded and looked at Ninth Summit.

"I miss the Abyss Dragon... We'll meet in Ninth Summit," the bald crane said dejectedly, then turned around and left.

When the bald crane disappeared, Su Ming stared at the calm galaxy and sighed softly. He noticed that once he woke up from his epiphany regarding Boundless Dao Realm, he was sighing for all the one hundred something years he had been gone. His expression grew slightly complicated when he took a step forward.

With that one step, the galaxy distorted. When it returned to normal, Su Ming felt as if he had stepped into another galaxy, one that was isolated from his True Morning Dao World's will.

At the instant he entered it, the three black-robed men sitting and meditating immediately lifted their heads.

They were the three great Apostles and had actually descended in Arid Triad under Old Man Extermination's orders quite a long time ago. However, when Su Ming was in the boy's planet and cast his divine ability under the sycamore tree, he had closed his eyes. Nothing unusual seemed to have happened at that time, but in truth, the moment he closed his eyes, he had appeared in Arid Triad. He did not execute any shocking Art, but had just distorted the galaxy and bound the three black-robed men.

When he stepped in and the three black-robed men looked in his direction, they stood up from their seated positions... and Su Ming appeared in front of them.

More accurately speaking, he appeared in front of each of the three black-robed men.

That was because in the galaxy Su Ming had distorted with his will, the three black-robed men might have seemed to be together, but they could not see each other. The world was divided into three layers, and each layer... bound a single person.

Su Ming divided himself into three when he arrived, sending one of himself in each layer.

In the first layer was the incredibly big and built black-robed man. He looked at Su Ming and snorted coldly. The noise he made had a domineering air, and when it appeared, it shook the galaxy.

Su Ming looked at the big and built figure, wrapped his fist in his palm, and said softly, "I, the Fourth God of Berserkers Su Ming, greet the First God of Berserkers... Senior Lie Shan Xiu."

The big and built black-robed man was silent for a while before he took off the hood over his head to reveal an extraordinary valiant face. It had an ancient air, but looked somewhat boorish. He... was Lie Shan Xiu!

There was a slightly complicated look on his face when he looked at Su Ming, but it could be clearly seen that his mind was clear, just as clear as that of the Progenitor of Abyss Builders. There was not a hint of his mind being controlled.

Their gazes met, and after a long while, Lie Shan Xiu spoke in a hoarse voice. "You should not have refused to become the fifth Apostle in the past."

He had a dignified and domineering tone that brook no argument, which stemmed from his personality. He was once the first God of Berserkers, and he had led the Berserkers to power. He had created the kingdom of Berserkers and even fought against the Immortals. He had accomplished feats that could not be surpassed and created the God of Berserkers Song.

Although had uttered only a few simple words while standing before Su Ming, it felt as if the laws in the galaxy around him were changing.

"You should not have stood against Master Extermination. You... don't understand his Dao, but since you acknowledge me as the God of Berserkers, come with me and meet our master. You will then understand that his Dao is the path all of us should pursue!"

Lie Shan Xiu turned his head and looked into space. He might not be able to see Ninth Summit, but he seemed to sense the many Berserkers there.

"We are not enemies. Let's go. Come with me and meet our Master Extermination..."

"What is his Dao?" Su Ming asked while staring at Lie Shan Xiu.

"The universe is about to be destroyed, and Harmonious Morus Alba is bound to die. His Dao is one that can create a chance for all of us to survive before we die. That chance will be slim, but if we can grab hold of it, then be it the Berserkers or the other races, we will be able to continue living in another Harmonious Morus Alba!" Lie Shan Xiu said without hesitation.

“That chance of survival... requires the use of my appearance and my name to stir up a bloody massacre in Dark Dawn and Saint Defier?” Su Ming asked softly.

Lie Shan Xiu fell silent, but it only lasted for three breaths before a firm look appeared in his eyes.

“That’s right!”

Chapter 1350: Tian Xie Speaks with a Smile of Old Man Extermination’s Rise to Power

“His Dao is wrong,” Su Ming said faintly.

“All lives have a small chance of survival... If they truly have that chance...” Su Ming did not finish his sentence.

“It doesn’t matter whether it’s wrong or right, whether you acknowledge it or not, if you serve to be an obstruction to this person who will provide this chance of survival... then no matter who you are, you are my enemy.”

A brilliant glint shone in Lie Shan Xiu’s eyes. When he spoke, a powerful presence erupted from his body.

“You cannot win against me.”

Su Ming stared at Lie Shan Xiu. No matter how astonishing his presence was, in Su Ming’s eyes, he was so weak that he was like a candle flame that could be extinguished easily if Su Ming ever so desired.

Lie Shan Xiu closed his eyes. When he opened them again, fighting spirit burned in them. He took a step forward and instantly closed in. When he lifted his right hand, he clenched his fist and threw a punch in Su Ming’s direction.

When it struck space, the galaxy roared. Space distorted and tumbled about as if the galaxy had turned into an ocean. It swept up a huge wave that charged towards Su Ming as if it wanted to drown him. Su Ming did not move. He simply allowed the galaxy to distort and charge towards him, but at the instant it touched his body, it was as if he had turned invisible. Nothing about him changed.

Lie Shan Xiu narrowed his eyes. He moved again. This time, he appeared to Su Ming’s right. He formed his left hand into the shape of a claw, then went to attack Su Ming... but his hand just seeped through Su Ming’s body. What he touched was merely an

illusion. It was as if Su Ming was standing before him and was real, but under his Art, he turned into a mere illusion.

“His Dao... Oh well, since you insist in believing in his Dao and that there is that small chance of survival... I will let you leave and let you follow Old Man Extermination so that you can pursue his Dao.

Su Ming closed his eyes. When he opened them, he said softly, “Three hundred something years later, let’s see... just who is wrong.”

Fatigue appeared on his face, and he swung his arm. Immediately, a vortex appeared not far from them. It led to Heaven Lacking Expanse Cosmos.

Su Ming was tired. His heart was tired, and his body was exhausted. Everything about him screamed fatigue when he saw Lie Shan Xiu’s determination and saw him attack even though they should not have been enemies.

All of it left Su Ming incredibly tired. He still remembered how he had sensed Lie Shan Xiu’s hesitation when he was still in Black Ink Planet, of how he had felt before he left the mountain.

At that moment, Su Ming finally understood what Lie Shan Xiu had been hesitant about. It was about Old Man Extermination’s Dao, and once he chose to leave, perhaps in the depths of his heart, he had already come to believe in it.

Lie Shan Xiu stopped moving. He quietly pulled his hand back and stared at Su Ming with a complicated expression. He then turned around and walked towards the vortex. In his heart, he did not want to attack Su Ming either, but he believed that Old Man Extermination’s choice was correct, which was why... he had to attack.

At the instant he stepped into the vortex, Lie Shan Xiu stopped. He did not turn his head back, but he spoke slowly,

“You are truly, without a doubt, the God of Berserkers... I am very happy to see that you have grown to reach such heights. If I am proven wrong three hundred years later...”

Lie Shan Xiu fell silent. He did not continue speaking, but instead lifted his foot and walked into the vortex until he disappeared.

Disappearing with him was the galaxy created for him as well as the Su Ming in it.

Within the second layer of the galaxy, Su Ming sat cross-legged in front of a black-robed man. He had already pulled back his hood to reveal a kindly face. There was gratification on his face along with a gentleness that a person would have when they looked at someone who was considered their junior.

That smile and that gratification would only be worn by two people when they were before Su Ming, one of them was his elder, and the other was Tian Xie Zi.

“You’ve grown up. You’re no longer the child I took away from Han Mountain City in the past.” Tian Xie Zi smiled faintly and stared at Su Ming as he spoke with a sentimental tone.

Su Ming looked back at Tian Xie Zi in a daze. This person was his Master in its truest sense. The old man had taught him how to calm and clear his heart, and it was this old man who had taught him to experience changes of the heart. If he did not do it, Su Ming would have definitely not accomplished his feats.

It was also the old man before him who had allowed him to experience the warmth of home. He brought Su Ming with him see what it meant to be powerful and showed the land of Shamans to tell him what it meant to hunt. After Su Ming went missing, the old man had stepped into the land of Shamans many times to search for him... until the moment he went missing himself.

Without him, the ninth summit was no longer complete. Without him, Su Ming and his senior brothers always felt pain in their hearts...

Su Ming stared at the old man and remembered his journey while searching for Tian Xie Zi in Divine Essence Star Ocean... In the end, he had reached the fifth ocean, and only during the very final moments he was there did Su Ming come to realize that Tian Xie Zi was there, but he had not noticed his Master.

“Master...” Su Ming’s eyes were slightly moist as he murmured that one word.

“You resent me for not going to all of you, I know. Your eldest senior brother could take up the responsibility as your leader. Your second senior brother needed to experience even more trials, and as for Hu Zi... he is still young, but his potential is so great that it surpasses that of your eldest and second senior brothers. If he doesn’t change that trouble-making attitude of his however, it will be difficult for him to accomplish great things.

“Only you...”

“Your accomplishments are something I never expected. When I learned from Old Man Extermination that you have become the strongest in this aeon, I was very happy.

“I remember arguing privately with Lie Shan Xiu at that time about whether you belong to the Berserkers or whether you solely belong to the ninth summit. I can tell you that he is very happy. He is happy that such a powerful warrior appeared from the Berserkers,” Tian Xie Zi said with a smile. His kindness and the gratified expression on his face were real.

Su Ming had already grown up. In fact, he had become so smart that he was already like an old monster. His wisdom was so great that it was larger than the galaxy. He was a darkness that night could not cover, but when he was before his elder and Tian Xie Zi, Su Ming felt as if he had returned to the past. He was still the child from Dark Mountain and the youngest in the ninth summit.

“Old Man Extermination’s Dao... isn’t as what Lie Shan Xiu had said. It isn’t that accurate. Lie Shan Xiu isn’t very certain whether Extermination’s Dao will be successful either.”

When Tian Xie Zi spoke, no surprise appeared on Su Ming’s face. Tian Xie Zi could sense what Lie Shan Xiu had said. It was something Su Ming had realized from the moment he saw Tian Xie Zi.

Compared to Lie Shan Xiu, Tian Xie Zi’s presence was not great, but there was a feeling about him that bordered on bizarre. Even Su Ming had to observe him carefully before he could tell what it was.

After all... Change of Heart was an Art created by Tian Xie Zi!

“He did not choose it, but only believes in it, because if he did not believe in it, his beliefs would crumble. Not everyone can be free of their burdens before they die. Sometimes that burden isn’t their own lives, but for the most important things in their hearts. Because of that, Lie Shan Xiu cannot take a gamble.

“It is just like how the ninth summit and your tribe are the most important things to you. To Lie Shan Xiu, the most important thing is the Berserkers. He does not want their bloodline to end.

“That is why Old Man Extermination went to him. Once he made Lie Shan Xiu understand everything, he spoke of the small chance of survival, and naturally, Lie Shan Xiu chose to obey. Lie Shan Xiu is very smart. You are one of the paths for the Berserkers, and he is the other one. He does not care who is right and who is wrong, what he cares about is that in the end... someone must be right,” Tian Xie Zi said slowly while looking at Su Ming. There was a profound look on his face.

“Old Man Extermination... came to me when I experienced my ninth change of heart. He turned all the ideals I had gained through my various changes of heart unstable, and he planted the thought that I couldn’t fuse them together in my heart. That is why I have to see whether he is correct. If he is, then my thoughts will be clear and I will complete my Dao. If he isn’t... my thoughts will still be clear, and I will still complete my Dao.

“What exactly do cultivators cultivate? To me, what we cultivate are simply beliefs. Lie Shan Xiu harbored no guilt in using your appearance to slaughter those from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier. He was not merciful, and he couldn’t be merciful. This is related to his personality. Since he wants to gamble, he must put everything on the line.

"I don't like Lu Ya. He's far too sinister. I don't care if he has an evil heart, but that sinister and cold presence makes me disgusted. When he kills, he never feels any sort of discomfort, because it is just what he wants. After all... before you he was the one known as the strongest in this aeon!"

Tian Xie Zi smiled softly and looked at Su Ming. Without him even needing to ask anything, Tian Xie Zi told him all of it.

"Do what you should do. The path is under your feet, and no one can interfere with it. They're not allowed to. Those who do... just kill them."

Tian Xie Zi stood up slowly and cast a glance at Su Ming again.

"I'll be leaving now to return to Old Man Extermination. Since he insists on interfering with my ninth change of heart, then I will either cut him down, or he will do it to me. This is my business. You can't interfere with it, and you don't need to. Three hundred years later... If I fail, come and take revenge for me. That will be enough."

Tian Xie Zi smiled in a manner that said he was free of his burdens and swung his arm, then walked into space.

"Tell your eldest senior brother that a head isn't a symbol of his aspirations. Not growing it is just him not being able to reconcile with himself. What does he think he is? Does he think it's cool? It's just plain stupid.

"And your second senior brother too. He had long since gone past his change of heart regarding love. Phantoms might receive the disaster of love most commonly, but he can't act this way. He just had his heart hurt once, so tell him to stop moaning about nothing. I can sometimes see him, and even I get angry when I see him being so useless.

"As for Hu Zi, tell him to sleep more. Entering Dreams is his Dao. When he needs to drink, let him drink. When he should sleep, tell him to sleep. When he wants to peek, let him. Why isn't he practicing his cultivation but getting addicted to fighting? With all that fighting, his whole body is covered in blood. Does he think it makes him look charming?"

Tian Xie Zi reached Su Ming's ears from a distance, and a smile slowly appeared on his face. He watched his Master disappear, but his words still lingered in his ears, which made his smile grow brighter.

That was the Tian Xie Zi Su Ming knew. That was their Master. He did not have any inhibitions with his words, and when he scolded them, it made Su Ming feel as if he had returned to the ninth summit of the past...

Suddenly, Tian Xie Zi poked his head out from space. "By the way, I don't like Lu Ya. If you can kill him on the way, it'd save me the time of killing him myself." Once he said that, he disappeared once again...

Su Ming was momentarily stunned, then his smile became even wider. He stared at the spot where Tian Xie Zi had disappeared, and the love of a disciple for his Master was very obvious in his expression.

"Master, don't worry. Lu Ya will certainly die."